Free not to ask: On the semantics of free relatives and wh-words cross-linguistically

# UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA 

Los Angeles

Free Not to Ask:<br>On the Semantics of Free Relatives and Wh-words Cross-linguistically

> A dissertation submitted in partial satisfaction of the requirements for the degree Doctor of Philosophy
> in Linguistics

by<br>Ivano Caponigro

## INFORMATION TO USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted. Broken or indistinct print, colored or poor quality illustrations and photographs, print bleed-through, substandard margins, and improper alignment can adversely affect reproduction.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if unauthorized copyright material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.

UMI Microform 3121165
Copyright 2004 by ProQuest Information and Learning Company.
All rights reserved. This microform edition is protected against unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code.

ProQuest Information and Learning Company
300 North Zeeb Road
P.O. Box 1346

Ann Arbor, MI 48106-1346
© Copyright by
Ivano Caponigro
2003

The dissertation of Ivano Caponigro is approved.

Terence Parsons


Dominique Sportiche


University of Califomia, Los Angeles

Ai miei genitori Rosaria Facenda e Gerardo Caponigro,
il cui affetto, fiducia e sostegno non sono mai venuti meno in questi anni, qualunque cosa questo strano figlio facesse

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF CONVENTIONS ..... vii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ..... ix
VITA. ..... xi
PUBLICATIONS AND PRESENTATIONS ..... xii
ABSTRACT OF THE DISSERTATION ..... xiv
INTRODUCTION ..... 2
CHAPTER 1 Free Relatives: Definition and Cross-Linguistic Distribution ..... 8
1.1. Free relatives: a definition ..... 9
1.2. FREE RELATIVES AND WH-INTERROGATIVES ..... 12
1.3. Free relatives and headed relative clauses ..... 16
1.4. Free relatives cross-linguistically ..... 17
1.4.1. Cross-linguistic distribution of free relatives ..... 17
1.4.2. Cross-linguistic data ..... 20
1.4.2.1 A Germanic language: English ..... 21
1.4.2.2 A Romance language: Italian ..... 23
1.4.2.3 A Slavic language: Polish ..... 26
1.4.2.4 A Finno-Ugric language: Estonian ..... 29
1.4.2.5 A Semitic language: Hebrew ..... 32
1.5. SOME CONCLUSIONS ON THE DISTRIBUTION OF WH-WORDS ..... 35
CHAPTER 2 Maximality and the Semantics of DP-Like Standard Free
Relatives ..... 38
2.1. OVERVIEW OF THE CHAPTER ..... 38
2.2. STANDARD FREE RELATIVES ..... 38
2.3. DP-LIKE STANDARD FREE RELATIVES AND PP-LIKE STANDARD FREE RELATIVES ..... 40
23.1. DP-like standard free relatives ..... 40
2.3.2. PP-like standard free relatives ..... 41
2.3.3. Standard free relatives introduced by why? ..... 42
2.3.4. Generalization about the semantic contribution of DP-like standard FRs ..... 44
2.4. The SEMANTICS OF DP-LIKE STANDARD FREE RELATIVES ..... 44
2.4.1. The external semantics of DP-like standard free relatives ..... 44
2.4.1.1 The semantics of definite DPs (Link 1983) ..... 45
2.4.1.2 DP-like standard free relatives denote maximal entities ..... 48
2.4.1.3 Evidence. ..... 52
2.4.2. The internal semantics of DP-like standard free relatives ..... 55
2.4.2.1 Assumptions about the syntactic structure of DP-like standard free relatives ..... 55
2.4.2.2 A compositional semantics for DP-like standard free relatives ..... 56
2.4.2.2.1 DP-like standard free relatives introduced by who and what. ..... 56
2.4.2.2.1.1 An example ..... 56
2.4.2.2.1.2 A more general formulation and some related issues. ..... 59
2.4.2.2.2 DP-like free relatives introduced by where, when, and how ..... 63
2.4.2.2.3 On $\delta$ ..... 66
2.4.2.2.4 On the semantic contribution of wh-words: differences with Jacobson (1995) ..... 70
2.4.3. Conclusions ..... 72
2.5. AGAINST OTHER PROPOSALS ABOUT THE SEMANTICS OF DP-LIKE STANDARD FREE RELATIVES ..... 72
2.5.1. DP-like standard FRs as both definites and universals ..... 72
2.5.2. DP-like standard FR s as indefinites. ..... 75
2.5.2.1 Berman ..... 75
2.5.2.2 Wiltschko ..... 76
2.6. ON THE SYNTACTIC NATURE OF STANDARD FREE RELATIVES ..... 77
2.7. CONCLUSIONS ..... 80
CHAPTER 3 NON-MAXIMAL Free Relatives: Existential Free Relatives and PP-LIkE Standard Free ReLatives ..... 82
3.1. INTRODUCTION ..... 82
3.2. EXISTENTIAL FRS ..... 84
3.2.1. A definition ..... 84
3.2.2. Existential free relatives in the literature ..... 85
3.2.3. Existential free relatives are free relatives ..... 86
3.2.4. Existential free relatives cross-linguistically ..... 86
3.2.5. Predicates that introduce existential free relatives ..... 90
3.2.6. Existential free relatives and non-specific indefinite DPs ..... 91
3.2.7. A semantic analysis for existential free relatives ..... 93
3.2.7.1 Conclusions ..... 101
3.2.8. Other proposals ..... 101
3.2.8.1 Grosu and Landman (1998) ..... 101
3.2.8.2 Izvorski (1998) ..... 102
3.2.9. Conclusions: Existential free relatives and wh-words ..... 102
3.3. PP-LIKE STANDARD FREE RELATIVES ..... 103
3.3.1. Recalling the definition. ..... 103
3.3.2. PP-like standard FRs do not denote entities ..... 103
3.3.3. PP-like standard FRs that do not exhibit maximality ..... 105
3.4. CONCLUSIONS: NON-MAXIMAL FREE RELATIVES AND WH-WORDS ..... 109
CHAPTER 4 -Ever Free Relatives: Maximal or Non-maximal? ..... 111
4.1. -EVER FREE RELATIVES: A DEFINITION ..... 111
4.2. SOME CROSS-LINGUISTIC GENERALIZATIONS ABOUT -EVER FREE RELATIVES ..... 113
4.2.1. Generalization 1 : no whyever free relatives ..... 114
4.2.2. Generalization 2: [whatever/whichever + NP] vs. *[what/which + NP] ..... 115
4.2.3. Conclusions: -ever free relatives are free relatives ..... 115
4.3. THE SEMANTIC BEHAVIOR OF -EVER FREE RELATIVES ..... 116
4.3.1. Two readings for -ever free relatives? ..... 116
4.3.2. -ever free relatives as quantified expressions ..... 117
4.3.3. -ever free relatives as modalized definites (Dayal 1997) ..... 118
4.3.4. Adapting Dayal's proposal to our semantics for wh-words ..... 122
4.4. SOME OBJECTIONS TO DAYAL (1997) ..... 126
4.4.1. Objection 1: the majority of who/* whoever ..... 126
4.4.2. Objection 2 : quantificational variability ..... 130
4.4.3. Objection 3: [whatever/whichever + NP] vs. *[what/which + NP] ..... 131
4.5. A SUGGESTION ABOUT [WHATEVER/WHICHEVER + NP] VS. $*[W H A T / W H I C H+N P]$ ..... 132
4.6. CONClUSIONS ..... 134
CHAPTER 5 Quantificational Variability in Free Relatives ..... 136
5.1. INTRODUCTION ..... 136
5.2. ADVERBIALS OF QUANTIFICATION ..... 136
5.3. ADVERBIALS OF QUANTIFICATION AND KINDS OF DPS ..... 140
5.4. QUANTIFICATIONAL VARIABILITY EFFECTS IN FREE RELATIVES ..... 144
5.4.1. DP-like standard free relatives ..... 144
5.4.1.1 Quantificational variability with adverbials of frequency ..... 145
5.4.1.2 Quantificational variability with adverbials of quantity ..... 146
5.4.1.2.1 ExCURSUS 1: Two requirements about the matrix clause: episodicity and subject
position ..... 147
5.4.1.2.2 EXCURSUS 2: number morphology ..... 150
5.4.1.3 Conclusions on quantificational variability in DP-like standard FRs ..... 152
5.4.2. Existential FRs ..... 153
5.4.3. -ever FRs ..... 155
5.5. CONCLUSION ..... 158
CHAPTER 6 A quick look at wh-interrogatives ..... 159
CONCLUSION ..... 164
References ..... 179

| 1: | first person |
| :--- | :--- |
| 2: | second person |
| $3:$ | third person |
| ACC: | accusative case |
| ADE: | adessive case |
| AUX: | auxiliary |
| CL: | clitic pronoun |
| COM: | comitative case |
| COMP: | complementizer |
| CONJ: | conjunction |
| CP: | complementizer phrase |
| DAT: | dative case |
| DEM: | demonstrative |
| DP: | determiner phrase |
| F: | feminine |
| FA: | function application |
| FR: | free relative clause |
| FUT: | future |
| HEAD: | the "head" of a relative clause, i.e. the |
|  | constituent that a relative clause modifies |
| HR: | headed relative clause |
| IMP: | imperative |
| IMPERF: | imperfective |
| IND: | indicative |
| INE: | inessive case |
| INF: | infinitive |
| INT: | interrogative pronoun |
| IP: | inflectional phrase |
| LEX: | lexicon |
| M: | masculine |
| N: | neuter |
| NOM: | nominative case |
| NP: | noun phrase |
| P: | plural |
| PART: | partitive case |
|  |  |

PM: predicate modification
PP: preposition phrase
PRES: present
REFL: reflexive pronoun
RP: relative pronoun
s: singular
SUBJ: subjunctive
vP: verb phrase
wh-INT: wh-interrogative clause
$\lambda$-abstr: lambda abstraction

## Acknowledgements

Many people have directly or indirectly contributed to the present work. My parents have already received the dedication, not just because of their original contribution thirty-three years ago. I will skip over the other important figures of my childhood, adolescence, college years and later on, because I hope I am not ready for my autobiography yet nor do I believe that this is what my readers are really interested in. I will just mention those people who more directly helped me in different ways in the past few months while I was writing this dissertation. They are also good friends. As such, they already know how much they have done for me, why they have my gratitude and affection, and how large those are; therefore, I do not need to mention that publicly. I am also a bit jealous about my friends and their identity. Fortunately, each of them has different initials. Thanks to: C.B., C.C., C.S., D.B., D.H., G.C., G.S., H.T., L.B., M.B., P.S., S.C., S.K., V.D.

When you write a dissertation in a language that is not your native language, wherein you look at more than thirty languages and present data from more than twenty, only one of which you are a native speaker of, you really need lots of help from lots of people. I have been extremely lucky to find so many great consultants, mainly from the linguistic community around the world, but not exclusively. I have tried to list all of them below, but I may have forgotten some; therefore I apologize in advance. Some of them are also good friends, but once again they know that, so I do not need to mention it. They have all been extremely generous with their time and comments and deserve all my gratitude. It is in great part to their credit (but not at all their fault) that this dissertation has come to exist.

Basque: Gontzal Aldai, Urtzi Etxeberria Otaegi, Javier Ormazabal Zamakona Bavarian: Josef Bayer
Bulgarian: Roumyana Pancheva, Milena Petrova
Catalan: Amalia Llombart
DANISH: Line Mikkelsen
Dutch: Hilda Koopman, Mark de Vries
English: Carson Schütze and all the other English native speakers in the UCLA Linguistics Department
estonian: Lumme Erilt, Katrin Hiietam, Virve-Anneli Vihman
FARSI: Shabnam Shademan
Finnish: Elsi Kaiser, Païvi Koskinen, Liina Pylkkänen
French: Philippe Schlenker, Dominique Sportiche
German: Julia Berger-Morales, Jan Bruners, Daniel Büring
greek: Maria Baltazani, Elias Koutsoupias, Eleni Christodoulou, Dimitris Ntelitheos
Hebrew: Hagit Borer, Daphna Heller, Orr Ravitz, Yael Sharvit
hungarian: Anikó Lipták, Anna Szabolcsi
Icelandic: Gunnar Hrafn Hrafnbjargarson
ITALIAN: Emanuela Arosio, Lisa Brunetti, Carlo Cecchetto, Andrea Gualmini, Luisa Meroni, Manola Salustri, Gianluca Storto
macedonia: Slavica Kochovska, Igor Kochovski
malagasy: Ed Keenan
Moroccan Arabic: Taoufik Afkinich, Boujemaa Boudali
New York English: Judy B. Bernstein, Arthur Hyams, Nina Hyams
POLISH: Barbara Citko
Portuguese: Ana Maria Brito, Telmo Moia, Esmeralda Negrao, Jazon Santos
Romantan: Alexander Grosu
RUSSIAN: Ora Matushansky, Asya Pereltsvaig
Serbo-Croatian: Jelena Krivokapic, Alexandra Perovic
Slovenian: Tatjana Marvin
Spanish: Argelia Andrade, Maria Arche, Heriberto Avelino
SWISS GERMAN: Eric Haeberli, Henk van Riemsdijk, Manuela Schoenenberger
tagalog: Angelo Mercado and his parents
West Flemish: Liliane Haegeman
Wolof: Mariame Sy, Harold Torrence
Yiddish: Adam Albright

## VTTA

| Apri1 30, 1970 | Born, Lissone, Italy |
| :--- | :--- |
| 1995 | B.A. Philosophy <br> University of Pavia, Italy |
| $1998-2003$ | Teaching Assistant <br> Department of Linguistics <br> University of California, Los Angeles |
| 2001 - Winter Quarter | Visiting Student <br> Rutgers University, New Brunswick, NJ |

## PUBLICATIONS AND PRESENTATIONS

In press: "On the source of maximality in wh-constructions crosslinguistically." In Proceedings of the $38^{\text {th }}$ Meeting of the Chicago Linguistics Society (CLS 38).
"On the semantics of indefinite free relatives." In Mario van Koppen, Erik Jan van der Torre and Malte Zimmermann (eds.), Proceedings of the $10^{\text {th }}$ Meeting of the Student Organization of Linguistics in Europe (ConSOLE $X$ ).
"Parameterizing passive participle movement", with Carson T. Schütze, Linguistic Inquiry 34 (2): 293-308.
"Unbalanced coordination in Maasai." In Jason Kandybowicz (ed.), Papers in African Linguistics 3, UCLA Working Papers in Linguistics 9, pp. 1-16. Los Angeles, CA: Department of Linguistics, UCLA.
"The non concealed nature of free relatives: implications for connectivity." Invited paper. Workshop on Direct Compositionality, Brown University, Providence, RI, June 19-22.
"Free not to ask: Free relatives and question words." Invited paper. McMaster University, Hamilton, Ontario, Canada. February 5.
"On the non-quantificational nature of wh-words: Evidence from free relatives crosslinguistically." $77^{\text {th }}$ Annual Meeting of the Linguistic Society of America (LSA), Atlanta, January 3-5.
"Free relatives as DPs with a silent D and a CP complement." In Vida Samiian (ed.), Proceedings of the Western Conference on Linguistics 2000 (WECOL 2000), Fresno, CA: California State University.

Report on the $38^{\text {th }}$ Meeting of the Chicago Linguistics Society (CLS 38), Chicago, April 25-27, 2002, GLOT International, 6 (7) (http://www.linguistlistplus.com/glot/conferences. asp\#6-07/2).
"On the source of maximality in wh-constructions crosslinguistically", $38^{\text {th }}$ Meeting of the Chicago Linguistics Society (CLS 38), Chicago, April 25-27.
"The semantics of indefinite free relatives", $76{ }^{\text {th }}$ Annual Meeting of the Linguistic Society of America (LSA), San Francisco, January 3-6.
"Parameterizing passive participle movement", with Carson T. Schütze, $76^{\text {th }}$ Annual Meeting of the Linguistic Society of America (LSA), San Francisco, January 3-6.
"On the semantics of indefinite free relatives", 10 the Meeting of the Student Organization of Linguistics in Europe (ConSOLE X), Leiden, Netherlands, December 7-9.
"Is essere not to be? Evidence from acquisition." In Jill Gilkerson, Misha Becker and Nina Hyams (eds.), Language Development and Breakdown, UCLA Working Papers in Linguistics 5. Los Angeles, CA: Department of Linguistics, UCLA. pp. 40-55.
"Free relatives as DPs with a silent D and a CP complement", Western Conference on Linguistics 2000 (WECOL 2000), Fresno, CA, October 27 29.

# ABSTRACT OF THE DISSERTATION 

Free Not to Ask:

On the Semantics of Free Relatives and Wh-words Cross-linguistically
by

## Ivano Caponigro

Doctor of Philosophy in Linguistics
University of California, Los Angeles, 2003
Professor Daniel Büring, Chair

This dissertation investigates the question of the semantic contribution of wh-words like who, what, where, when, how, and their equivalents across languages. By looking at the cross-linguistic semantic behavior of non-interrogative wh-clauses known as free relatives, it is shown that wh-words do not behave like quantified or definite or indefinite expressions. Rather, their semantic contribution is that of restricting a set: they apply to the set denoted by the remaining part of the clause and return one of its subsets (who retums the subset of the entities that are animate, what the subset of the entities that are inanimate, etc.). Empirical support for this conclusion is presented from four kinds of free relatives: DP-like standard free relatives (e.g. Jie ate [what Adam cooked]), PP-like standard free relatives (e.g. Captain Kirk went [where no one had gone before]),
existential free relatives (e.g. from New York English: I have [what to eat] 'I have something to eat'), and -ever free relatives (e.g. Jie eats [whatever Adam cooks]). A compositional model-theoretic semantic analysis of DP-like standard free relatives and existential free relatives is given based on data from more than twenty languages from three different language families. Across languages, DP-like standard free relatives are analyzed as always referring to a maximal entity, as in Link's (1983) analysis of definite descriptions and Jacobson's (1995) analysis of free relatives in English. But, unlike those proposals, maximality is argued not to be lexically triggered, but to result from a default type-mismatch repairing strategy. Crucially, wh-words do not lexically encode maximality. Existential free relatives are analyzed as set-denoting expressions that are existentially closed by the matrix predicate. Therefore, wh-words do not lexically encode existential quantification. PP-like standard free relatives are shown to sometimes exhibit maximality, like DP-like standard free relatives (e.g. I was born [where my parents were born]), and other times not (e.g. Captain Kirk went [where no one had gone before]). The semantic properties of eever free relatives are discussed in detail and an implementation of Dayal's (1997) proposal is given based on the assumption that wh-words act as set restrictors. Quantificational variability effects in free relatives are discussed as further empirical support for the main claim. Finally, it is shown how also Karttunen's (1977) influential proposal for interrogatives can be implemented if wh-words are assumed to behave as set restrictors. This dissertation shows that if the same wh-words can occur in wh-clauses that exhibit different semantic properties, then the wh-words themselves cannot be responsible for those semantic differences; moreover, their semantic
contribution must be compatible with the full range of meanings of wh-clauses.
Restricting a set is argued to be the required meaning for wh-words.

Wovon man nicht sprechen kann, darüber muß man schweigen.
'What we cannot speak about we must pass over in silence.'
(Ludwig Wittgenstein, Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus, Proposition 7)

## INTRODUCTION

What is the semantic contribution of phrasal wh-words like who, what, where, when, how, and their equivalents across languages? The present work is an attempt to answer this not-so-unusual question in an unusual way.

Wh-words have been claimed to denote sets of entities (e.g. Hamblin 1973), to be existential quantified expressions (e.g. Karttunen 1977), to be ambiguous between existentially quantified and universally quantified expressions (e.g. Hintikka 1976), to behave like definite description (e.g. Jacobson 1995), or to introduce a free variable in the logical representation, like indefinites ${ }^{1}$ (e.g. Nishigauchi 1986, 1990; Berman 1991, 1994; Ginzburg and Sag 2002). In other words, the entire semantic inventory for nominals has been suggested as the denotation of wh-words.

I believe the unpleasant heterogeneity of these proposals to be due to at least two main factors. First, the semantic behavior of wh-words has mainly been studied in interrogative clauses, about which our semantic intuitions are far from being sharp. For instance, it is basically impossible to paraphrase the embedded wh-interrogative what Adam cooked in the sentence Jie wonders what Adam cooked without making use of a wh-word. This shows that we do not have sharp intuitions about wh-interrogatives being semantic equivalent or very similar to other expressions in the language. Therefore, it is even harder to have intuitions about a subcomponent of wh-interrogatives, like wh-words.

Second, the semantic behavior of wh-words has mainly been studied within a language

[^0]at a time, which turned out to be English most of the time. This is problematic because it prevents us from distinguishing what is idiosyncratic and language-specific from what is truly general across languages in the semantic contribution of wh-words.

In the present work, I try to overcome these two factors by studying the semantic behavior of wh-words in free relative clauses (FRs) cross-linguistically. Like wh-interrogatives, FRs are introduced by who, what, where, when, how, and their equivalents across languages; but, unlike wh-interrogatives, we have clearer semantic intuitions about them. For instance, the FR what Adam cooked in the sentence Jie ate what Adam cooked can be easily paraphrased as the thing(s) Adam cooked or the food Adam cooked. Crucially, we have intuitions about what kinds of expressions in the language are truth-conditionally equivalent to FRs.

As for the cross-linguistic component of my approach, it has the advantage to allow us to distinguish what is general from what is language-specific. For instance, although all the three sentences in (1) are judged unacceptable in English because of the bracketed FRs, only $b$. and $c$. are unacceptable across languages, while the equivalent of $a$. is perfectly fine in other languages (e.g. Italian and Spanish).
(1) a. * [Who wants to marry me] lives around the corner.
b. * I read [what book you read].
c. * I did it [why YOU did it].

What we conclude by looking at the semantic behavior of FRs cross-linguistically is that the semantic contribution of wh-words is the one of restricting a set: they apply to a set and return one of its subsets. The set that wh-words apply to always results from $\lambda$-abstracting over the variable that is introduced in the logical representation by the
wh-trace. For instance, what in Jie ate [what Adam liked t] applies to the set of entities that Adam liked and returns the subset of inanimate entities that Adam liked. The set of things that Adam liked results from $\lambda$-abstracting over the variable introduced by the wh-trace t.

Here is a brief summary of how I reach this conclusion. In Chapter 1, I give a precise definition of $F R$, which is more restrictive than what is usually assumed in the literature. Crucially, it requires FRs to be always introduced by wh-words, i.e. words that can also introduce interrogatives. With this definition in hand, I have been able to find FRs in at least twenty eight different languages from three language families, and this counting is by no means exhaustive. Once I establish that the cross-linguistic pattern is large and robust, I move to discuss the semantic behavior of FRs.

In Chapter 2, I look at DP-like standard FRs (e.g. Jie ate [what Adam cooked]) and I argue that they semantically behave like definite DPs. In other words, DP-like standard FRs denote a maximal entity, according to the definition of maximal entity in Link (1983). This is basically the proposal that is put forward in Jacobson (1995) for English FRs. ${ }^{2}$ My main contribution is to show that it holds cross-linguistically.

I also add three new arguments to the ones in Jacobson (1995) in order to support the similarity between DP-like FRs and definite DPs. First, I show that DP-like standard FRs can never refer to any other entity smaller than the maximal one, even in a situation in which the non-maximal reading would be strongly preferred. Second, I show that it is cross-linguistically true that DP-like standard FRs can always be replaced and

[^1]paraphrased with definite DPs or any other expressions that denote a maximal entity. Third, I show that DP-like standard FRs pattern like definite DPs and unlike the other kinds of DP as far as quantificational variability effects with adverbs of quantity like for the most part are concerned.

In Chapter 3, I discuss existential FRs. I first show that they are introduced by the same wh-words as DP-like standard FRs and are found in all languages that have DP-like standard FRs, with the exception of most Germanic languages. An example of an existential $F R$ in Italian is given in
(2) Non ho [ FR chi mandare alla conferenza]. not have. 1s who to-send to-the conference 'I don't have anybody to send to the conference.'

I then argue that existential FRs never denote an entity, but rather a set of entities. I give two arguments in favor of this conclusion. Existential FRs can never be replaced with definite DPs or their equivalents, which are the entity-denoting expressions by definition. Also, existential FRs do not pattern like definite DPs and DP-like standard FRs as far as quantificational variability effects with adverbs of quantity are concerned, but rather they exhibit the same behavior as (existentially) quantified DPs.

In conclusion, the cross-linguistic study of DP-like standard FRs and existential FRs clearly shows that they behave in two different way semantically. Since these FRs are introduced by the same set of wh-words, wh-words themselves cannot be responsible for the semantic differences between these FRs. Moreover, the semantic contribution of wh-words must be such to be compatible with the semantic properties of both DP-like standard FRs and existential FRs. Therefore, wh-words cannot be existentially quantified
expressions or universally quantified expressions, otherwise DP-like standard FRs could not end up denoting a maximal entity. Similarly, wh-words cannot be like definite descriptions, otherwise existential FRs would not be expected to semantically behave like they do. Finally, wh-words cannot denote set of entities, otherwise it would be impossible to derive any DP-like denotation for any FRs. I conclude that a correct account for the semantic behavior of FRs can be given only if wh-words are assumed to introduce a free variable in the logical representation.

A compositional semantics for DP-like standard FRs and existential FRs based on the assumption that wh-words act as set restrictors is elaborated in Chapter 2 and Chapter 3 respectively. In brief, my analysis makes DP-like standard FRs and existential FRs very similar, at least up to a certain point. Syntactically, they are both CPs. Semantically, they both end up denoting a set of entities after the wh-word is combined with the rest of the FR. At this point, their semantic derivations diverge. DP-like standard FRs turned from denoting a set to denoting its maximal entity. I argue that this is the optimal way to the preserve as much information as possible while solving the type-mismatch between the matrix predicate, which selects for an entity-denoting expression, and the DP-like standard $F R$, which originally denotes a set of entities.

As for existential FRs, they are existentially closed by the existential quantifier that I assume is lexically introduced by the matrix predicate. This explains their very restricted distribution as complements of existential predicates and their semantic behavior similar to the ones of existentially quantified expressions.

Although similarities and differences between DP-like standard FRs and
existential FRs are more than enough to suppor the conclusions about the semantic contribution of wh-words I argue for in the present work, I also discuss two more cases of FRs that point at the same direction, though I do not give a compositional semantics for them: PP-standard FRs and -ever FRs. PP-standard FRs are discussed in Chapter 3 as an example of a FR that is found in English as well that may or may not exhibit maximality (e.g. Captain Kirk went [where no man had gone before]).
-ever FRs (e.g. Jie eats [whatever Adam cooks]) are discussed in Chapter 4. After describing their properties in details, I introduce the proposal in Dayal (1997). Although this is the most comprehensive and elegant proposal about eever FRs I am aware of, I tentatively argue that if we follow Dayal (1997) and assume that the semantic contribution of ever FRs is compositionally derived from wh-words whose lexical meaning incorporates maximality we may end up making unexpected and problematic prediction. Once again, a characterization of wh-words as set restrictors seems to fit the semantic behavior of FRs better.

The last chapter, Chapter 5, is devoted to a comparison of the quantificational variability effects of different kinds of FRs under adverbs of quantification. Their behavior is compared with the one of different kinds of DPs and the results give further support to the conclusions I reached in the previous chapters: DP-like standard FRs behave like definite DP, while existential FRs and eever FRs behave like quantified expressions.

## CHAPTER 1

## Free Relatives: Definition and Cross-linguistic Distribution

Wh-clauses that look like (embedded) wh-interrogatives (wh-INTs) can occur in noninterrogative contexts in English. For instance, what Adam cooked is the complement of the non-interrogative predicate taste in (1a), while it is the complement of the interrogative predicate wonder in (1b). Intuitions are clear that the two wh-clauses are not semantically equivalent. Unlike (1b), what Adam cooked in (1a) can be replaced and paraphrased with a DP like the thing(s) Adam cooked (cf. (1c)).
(1) a. I tasted [what Adam cooked].
b. I wonder [wh-int what Adam cooked].
c. I tasted [ Dp the thing(s) Adam cooked].

Non-interrogative wh-clauses like what Adam cooked in (1a) have been called free relatives (FRs): "relatives" because their distribution and interpretation has been felt to be somehow similar to headed relatives (HRs); "free" because they lack the overt HEAD ${ }^{3}$ that always precedes HRs (cf. (2)). ${ }^{4}$

[^2](2) a. I tasted [re what Adam cooked].
b. I tasted [pp the [head thing(s)] [hr that Adam cooked]].

FRs are not limited to wh-clauses with what. They can also be introduced by other phrasal wh-words ${ }^{5}$ like who, where, how and when:
(3) a. I'll marry [re who you choose]. ${ }^{6}$
b. You can't smoke [FR where the kids are playing].
c. Ileft [FR when Flavio arrived].
d. I did it [FR how you did it].?

The purpose of this initial chapter is to give a precise definition of FRs, to show how they can be distinguished from wh-INTs and HRs when they look identical, to present cross-linguistic data that show that FRs are not just an idiosyncrasy of English, and finally to draw some conclusions about FRs, wh-INTs, HRs, and their wh-words on the basis of the cross-linguistic patterns we have found. This will set the empirical stage for the next chapter, where a semantic analysis of FRs and wh-words will be developed.

### 1.1. Free relatives: a definition

Let us start with a definition that identifies all and only those constructions that will be called FRs throughout this work.

[^3](4) Definition of $F R s$

FRs are all and only those strings that satisfy the following properties:
a. they contain a wh-word, or a morphologically complex word with a wh-word as its root (lexical property);
b. they are clauses with a gap (syntactic property);
c. they can always be replaced with truth-conditionally equivalent DPs or PPs (semantic property).

The lexical property in (4a) requires a FR to contain either a wh-word, i.e. a word that occurs and characterizes a wh-INT as such, or a morphologically complex word like whatever in English or ót ( (ó-ti 'what' in FRs, but lit. 'the-what') in Modern Greek, which have a wh-word as their root. The syntactic property in (4b) requires a FR to be a clause with a gap. Therefore, the sentence You can do whatever is not a FR because it does not have a gap, though it contains whatever and satisfies the lexical property. Veneeta Dayal correctly pointed out to me that a language with wh-situ that have FRs may not have a gap. On the other hand, I have not yet found such a language. Finally, the semantic property in (4c) requires a FR to be replaceable and truth-conditionally equivalent to a DP or a PP. Notice that the DP or PP that replaces a FR does not need to occur in exactly the same syntactic position: distributional differences between FRs and DPs have been observed: for instance, FRs can occur postverbally in Dutch and German, while DPs usually cannot (Groos and van Riemsdijk 1981)

The bracketed string in (1a) above, repeated here as (5a), is a FR, according to the definition in (4): it contains the wh-word what, it has a main predicate cooked with a gap in its complement position, and it can be replaced and paraphrased with the bracketed DP in (5b).
(5) a. I tasted [what Adam cooked].
b. I tasted [op the food/things Adam cooked].

Similar considerations apply to all the examples in (3) above, which have been repeated in (6). Each bracketed string in (6) is immediately followed by the result of replacing it with a truth-conditionally equivalent $D P$ or $P P$.
(6) a. I'll marry [FR who you choose].
a'. I'll marry [dp the person you choose].
b. You can't smoke [FR where the kids are playing].
b'. You can't smoke [pp in the places where the kids are playing].
c. I left [FR when Flavio arrived].
$c^{\prime}$. I left [pp at the same time that Flavio arrived].
d. I did it [fr how you did it].
d'. I did it [pp in the way you did it].

Notice that, according to the definition in (4), the bracketed strings in (7a) and (7b) are not FRs, though they look like non-interrogative wh-clauses. In fact, replacing the FR with a DP gives rise to the unacceptable sentences in $\left(7 a^{\prime}\right)$ and $\left(7 b^{\prime}\right)$ (which should be read without any pause between that or he and the following $D P$ ).
(7) a. I ate that [which Adam cooked].
$a^{\prime}$.* I ate that [bp the food Adam cooked].
b. He [who doesn't sleep enough] feels tired.
b'.* He [op the person who doesn't sleep enough] feels tired.

The bracketed strings in (7a) and (7b) are just HRs whose heads are determiner-like elements rather than nominal ones. ${ }^{8}$

[^4]
### 1.2. Free relatives and wh-interrogatives

FRs can look identical to wh-INTs:
(8) a. I wonder [wh-TNT what Adam cooked].
$a^{\prime}$. I ate [ ${ }_{\mathrm{FR}}$ what Adam cooked].
b. I wonder [wh-INT who you will choose].
b'. I'll marry [Fr who you choose].
c. I wonder [wh-NT where the kids are playing].
c'. You can't smoke [FR where the kids are playing].
d. I wonder [wh-NTt when Flavio arrived].
d'. I left [FR when Flavio arrived].
e. I wonder [wh-iNT how you did it].
e'. I did it [re how you did it].

Nevertheless, intuitions are clear that FRs and wh-INTs have different semantic properties. Some tests can help to make these intuitions explicit.

Test 1: Substitution. Wh-INTs can be replaced by yes/no interrogatives ( $\mathbf{y} / \mathrm{m}$-INTs) introduced by whether, while FRs usually cannot. On the other hand, as we saw above, FRs can always be replaced with truth-conditionally equivalent DPs or PPs, while wh-INTs usually cannot. More generally, wh-INTs always occur as arguments of interrogative predicates, while FRs are either arguments of non-interrogative predicates or adjuncts. For instance, the FR what Adam cooked (9a) can be replaced by the DP the food Adam cooked (9b), but not by the $\mathrm{y} / \mathrm{n}-\mathrm{INT}$ whether Adam cooked risotto (9c), whereas the identical wh-INT (10a) exhibits the opposite substitution pattern (10b-c). All the other examples given above behave similarly.
(9) a. I ate [fr what Adam cooked].
b. I ate [pp the food Adam cooked]. c. ${ }^{1}$ I ate [y/n-INT whether Adam cooked risotto].
(10) a. I wonder [wh-INT what Adam cooked].
b. *I wonder [Dp the food Adam cooked].
c. I wonder [y/n-INT whether Adam cooked risotto].

It is true that an interrogative predicate like wonder can have its wh-INT complement replaced with a PP introduced by about, as shown in (11).
(11) a. I wonder [whint what Adam cooked].
b. I wonder [pp about the food Adam cooked].

Nevertheless, (11a) and (11b) are not truth-conditionally identical. If I know what food Adam cooked, I can no longer wonder what he cooked, but I can still wonder about what he cooked.

Notice that there are predicates like know that can select for both interrogative and non-interrogative complements. (12a) is genuinely ambiguous between a reading according to which I don't know the answer to the question What did Adam cook? and a reading according to which I am making the claim that I am not familiar with the kind of food Adam cooked. This is due to a lexical ambiguity of the predicate know, which explains why know can be followed by either a yes/no interrogative (12b) or a non-interrogative DP (12c).
(12) a. I don't know [wh-INT/FR what Adam cooked].
b. I don't know [y/n-INT whether Adam cooked risotto].
c. I don't know [Dp the food Adam cooked].

Other languages like Italian, German and Spanish express the meanings of "be able to answer" and "be acquainted with" by means of two different lexical items.

Although the substitution test and, more generally, the definition in (4) are successful most of the time, exceptions are found. Verbs of sensation like taste or smell can take
either a FR or a whether-clause as their complement (13a), ${ }^{9}$ while interrogative predicates like guess or tell can take either a wh-INT or a DP as their complement, with the DP being interpreted as a "concealed question" $"$ (13b).
(13) a. Taste [er what Adam cooked]!
[ymin-1NT whether Adam put enough salt in the soup]!
b. Tell me [wh-NTT how old you are]! [Dp your age]!

Test 2: Question formation. Baker (1968: 9-11) reports the following test by Jespersen (1909-49: III) to distinguish FRs and wh-INTs. When a wh-INT is itself questioned, the wh-word employed is always what, no matter which wh-word introduces it (cf. (14) ${ }^{11}$ ). On the other hand, a FR can always be questioned by means of a wh-INT introduced by the same wh-word (cf. (15) ${ }^{12}$ ).
(14) a. John knows [wh-INT where the Cottonwood river joins the Neosho].
b. *Where does John know?
c. What does John know?
(15) a. John lives [ER where the Cottonwood river joins the Neosho].
b. Where does John live?
c. *What does John live?

Given its nature, this test fails to distinguish between wh-INTs and FRs when they are both introduced by what:

[^5](16) a. Jie asked [wh-iNT what Adam cooked].
b. What did Jie ask?
(17) a. Jie ate [fr what Adam cooked].
b. What did Jie eat?

Test 3: wh-word + else. Ross (1967: 38 [1986: 20]) observes that the word else can appear after the wh-word in wh-INTs, while it cannot in FRs:
(18) a. I wonder [wh-NT what else Adam cooked].
a'. I wonder [wh-1NT where else Adam has been].
b. *I tasted [FR what ellse Adam cooked].
b'. * I went [fr where ellse Adam has been].
On the other hand, some of my consultants find wh-INTs with how else marginal (19a) and most of them find wh-INTs with when else either marginal or unacceptable (19b):
(19) a. \% Trust me: she certainly knows [wh-INT how else we could do it].
b. \% I wonder [wh-iNT when else we could go there].

Test 4: wh-word + the hell. McCawley (1998: 456) notices that the wh-words in wh-INTs can be followed by expressions such as the hell, while FRs cannot.
(20) a. I wonder [wh-INT what the hell Adam cooked]. b. *I tasted [FR what the hell Adam cooked].

On the other hand, some wh-INTs do not pass the test either (cf. den Dikken and Giannakidou (2001):
(21) a. *I know [wh-NT where the hell she wants to go on vacation].
b. *Sara found out [wi-NT why the hell Massimo didn't show up].

Variants of the sentences in (21) with negation or future tense in the matrix clause are judged more acceptable:
(22) a. I don't know [wh-int where the hell she wants to go on vacation].
b. Sara will surely find out [wh-INT why the hell Massimo didn't show up].

Although none of the tests above is infallible, when applied together, they can always distinguish FRs and wh-INTs for our purposes. More on the differences between these constructions can be found in Baker (1968: Ch. 2).

### 1.3. Free relatives and headed relative clauses

FRs can look like HRs in English:
(23) a. I'll marry [FR who you choose].
a'. I'll marry the person [hr who you choose].
b. You can't smoke [rR where the kids are playing].
b'. You can't smoke in the room [HR where the kids are playing].
c. Ileft [fR when Flavio arrived].
c'. I left at the time [HR when Flavio arrived].

FRs can be easily distinguished from HRs by means of their semantic property (cf. (4c)). They can always be replaced and paraphrased with a DP or a PP, while HRs never can. (24) shows this contrast with the examples in (23a) above. The FR can be replaced with a DP (24b), while the HR cannot (24a).
(24) a. I'll marry the person [HR who you choose]
*[DP the person you choose].
b. I'll marry [rR who you choose]
[Dp the person you choose].

The same contrast holds for the remaining FRs and HRs in (23b-c).

### 1.4. Free relatives cross-linguistically

### 1.4.1. Cross-linguistic distribution of free relatives

FRs, that is constructions that satisfy the definition in (4), are not an idiosyncrasy of English. They are attested in many languages from several language families. So far I have found them in the languages listed in Table 1 below. Only languages that are still spoken have been included. I have access to native speakers of all the languages listed below except for Albanian and Sardinian.

Table 1. Languages where I have found FRs so far


Notice that the definition of FR adopted here (cf. (4)) is more restrictive than what is usually found in the literature. For instance, Ramos-Santacruz (1994) and

Gutiérrez-Rexach $(1999,2002)$ call Spanish constructions like the bracketed one in (25) FRs, while they cannot be FRs according to our definition since they do not contain a wh-word.
(25) [Lo que Pedro vio] due incredible. ${ }^{13}$ the that Pedro saw was incredible
'What Pedro saw was incredible.'

There are at least two reasons for being so restrictive, a theoretical one and a practical one. Theoretically, constructions like the bracketed one in (25) look like a HEAD+HR string: they are introduced by a HEAD (the neuter determiner $l o$ in (25)) that is immediately followed by an element that introduces HRs (the complementizer que in (25)). The only difference with usual HRs is that the HEAD is a determiner rather than a noun. English has similar HRs as well. In the examples in (26), the determiner-like elements those and that are immediately followed by a HR.
(26) a. [[head Those] [hr who were against the war]] were all arrested.
b. [[head That] [hr which you just said]] doesn't make much sense.

Notice that neither of the bracketed strings I labeled HR in (26) could form an acceptable FR according to our definition, as shown in (27).
(27) $\mathrm{a} .{ }^{*}[$ Who was/were against the war] was/were (all) arrested.
b.* [Which you just said] doesn't make much sense.

In conclusions, constructions like the ones in (25) in Spanish and (26) in English always have a HEAD and, crucially, their HEAD is always followed by a relative pronoun or any other element that introduces usual HRs as well. As we will soon see,

[^6]FRs are not introduced by the same elements that introduce HRs in many languages. I take this as evidence that FRs and constructions like the one in (25) and (26) do not form a natural class and should not be grouped together.

The practical reason for being so restrictive is that one of the main goals of the present work is to use FRs to investigate the semantic behavior of wh-words in general. FRs without wh-words would not be of any help for this purpose. Both reasons will be discussed in much more detail at the end of this chapter, after presenting the cross-linguistic data.

### 1.4.2. Cross-linguistic data

Examples are given below of wh-INTs, FRs and HRs cross-linguistically. The data from five of the languages with FRs mentioned above are given in the main body of this chapter, while I have grouped the examples from the remaining languages in Appendix 1, for the sake of readability. Some conclusions on the cross-linguistic distribution of wh-words are presented and discussed at the end of this chapter in $\S 1.5$.

The data below and the data in the appendix are presented in the same format. For each language, six triples of examples are given. The first example of each triple (a.) contains a wh-INT, the second example (b.) contains the identical FR (or the closest one in form) whenever the language allows such a FR to be formed, and finally the third example (c.) contains a HR that is (almost) identical in meaning and as close as possible in form to the preceding $F R$, if such a $F R$ is attested in the language.

For each language, the wh-INT of the first triple is introduced by the equivalent of who in that language, the second triple by the equivalent of what, the third triple by the
equivalent of where, the fourth triple by the equivalent of when, the fifth triple by the equivalent of how, and finally the sixth triple by the equivalent of why. A table summarizes the distribution of wh-words in wh-INTs, FRs and HRs right below the data.

Remarks about general properties of that language or wh-INTs, FRs or HRs in that language precede the data as General comments. More specific remarks have been added below the data as Specific comments.

The complementizer that can introduce HRs in many languages is glossed as COMP. Pronominal forms that can occur only in HRs, but not in wh-INTs and FRs, are glossed RP (Relative Pronoun). Language-specific conventions for glosses are mentioned right before presenting the data. Morphological marking for gender, number and/or case has not been glossed unless relevant. A list of conventions is given right after the acknowledgments.

### 1.4.2.1 A Germanic language: English

General comments. Below I have grouped the data I discussed earlier in order to evidenciate similarities and differences. English exhibits a large overlap between the elements that introduce wh-INTs, FRs, and HRs, with some interesting asymmetries. All phrasal wh-words that introduce wh-INTs can introduce FRs as well, except for why. On the other hand, only why, when and where can introduce also HRs, while what and how cannot. So, wh-INTs and FRs pattem almost alike, as far as wh-words are concemed, while HRs exhibit more differences.

What about which? It can occur in wh-INTs and HRs, but not in FRs. I believe that the different restrictions that the two uses of which display show that we are dealing with
homonyms. Which in HRs requires an inanimate antecedent in Standard English and cannot take a DP complement; which in wh-INTs does not have any animacy restriction and requires an overt DP complement (which can be optionally silent if recoverable from the context). As we will discuss later on, FRs ban complex wh-phrases in general. Therefore, it is expected for the which that occurs in wh-INTs not to occur in FRs, since it always forms a complex wh-phrase by requiring a DP complement.

Another case in which the similarity between wh-INTs and FRs seems to break down is with why, which can introduce wh-INTs, but not FRs. This is cross-linguistically true.

On the other hand, the use of why to introduce HRs seems to be more language specific.
(28) who
a. I wonder [wh-INT who you will choose].
b. I'll marry [ FR who you choose].
c. I'll marry the person [HR who you choose].
(29) what
a. I wonder [wh-NT what Adam cooked].
b. I tasted [FR what Adam cooked].
c. I tasted the food [HR ${ }^{*}$ what ${ }^{14} /$ which/that Adam cooked].
(30) where
a.. I wonder [wh-NTT where the kids are playing].
b. You can't smoke [FR where the kids are playing].
c. You can't smoke in the places [нr where the kids are playing].
(31) when
a. I wonder [wh-INT when Flavio arrived].
b. I left [fR when Flavio arrived].
c. I left at the time [hR when Flavio arrived].

[^7](32) how
a. I wonder [wh-int loow you did it].
b. I did it [fR how you did it]. ${ }^{15}$
c. I did it in the way [HR *how/that you did it].
(33) why
a. I wonder [wh-NT why you did it].
b.*I did it [ER why you did it].
c. The reason [hr why/?that you did it] is obvious.

Table 2. Distribuition of wh-words in English

|  | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }{ }^{*}$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |

Specific comments. Who. FRs introduced by who are restricted in English. Most (but not all) speakers find them unacceptable when who signals a missing subject, no matter what syntactic position the FR occupies inside the matrix clause (34a-b). They improve remarkably when who signals a missing complement ( $34 \mathrm{c}-\mathrm{e}$ ).
(34) a. ?? [Who doesn't sleep enough] feels tired the following morning.
b. ?? I admire [who works hard].
c. I will marry [who you choose].
d. You are not gonna meet [who I am going out with]. ${ }^{16}$
e. Abu Dhabi TV also released a separate audiotape of [who they claimed to be Saddam]. ${ }^{17}$

### 1.4.2.2 A Romance language: Italian

General comments. In Italian, the wh-words chi 'who', quando 'when', and come 'how'

[^8]can introduce both wh-INTs and FRs, but not HRs. Dove 'where' can introduce all three clause types. Che cosa 'what' can introduce only wh-INTs, but its reduced variant cosa can occur in FRs as well, though there is variation among speakers (see the discussion in Specific comments below).
(35) who
a. Dimmi ${ }_{\text {wh-INT }}$ chi $/ *$ che lavora duramente]. tell-me who/*COMP works hard 'Tell me who works hard.'
b. Ammiro [ FR chi $/ *$ che lavora duramente]. admire.1sG who/*COMP works hard 'I admire those who work hard.'
c. Ammiro le persone [HR *chi /che lavorano duramente]. admire. ISG the people *who/COMP work hard 'I admire the people who work hard.'
(36) what
a. Dimmi $[$ wh- NNT che cosa/*che hai cucinato $]$. tell-me what thing/*COMP have.2S cooked 'Tell me what you cooked.'
b. Ho assaggiato [fr *che cosa /*che hai cucinato]. have. 1s tasted *what thing/*COMP have. 2 S cooked ('I tasted what you cooked.')
c. Ho assaggiato il cibo [mR *che cosa /che hai cucinato]. have.1s tasted the food *what thing/COMP have. 2 s cooked 'I tasted the food you cooked.'
(37) where
a. Non so [wh-NT dove sono nati i miei genitori]. not know. Is where are born the my parents 'I don't know where my parents were born.'
b. Sono nato [re dove sono nati i miei genitori]. am bom where are born the my parents 'I was born where my parents were born.'
c. Sono nato nello stesso paese [hr dove sono nati i miei genitori]. am born in-the same town where are born the my parents 'I was born in the same town where my parents were born.'
(38) when
a. Ti ho chiesto [wh-INT quamdo/*in cui è arrivato Flavio]. to-you have. 1s asked when /*in RP is arrived Flavio 'I asked you when Flavio arrived.'
b. Sono partito [FR quandio/*im cuilè arrivato Flavio]. am left when $/ *$ in RP is arrived Flavio 'I left when Flavio arrived.'
c. Sono partito nel momento [HR *quando/in cuì è arrivato Flavio]. am left in-the moment *when /in RP is arrived Flavio 'I left at the time when Flavio arrived.'
(39) how
a. Dimmi [wh-NTcome/*incuilhai fatto tu]. Tell-me how /*in RP it-have. 2 S done you 'Tell me how you did it.'
b. L'ho fatto [FR come/*in cuil'hai fatto tu]. it-have. 1 s done how /*in RP it-have. 2 S done you 'I did it how you did it.'
c. L'ho fatto nel modo [HR *come/in cuil lhai fatto tu].
it-have. 1 s done in-the way *how /in RP it-have. 2 S done you 'I did it in the way you did it.'
(40) why
a. Dimmi [wh-INT perché/*per cuil'hai fatto]. Tell-me why $/ *$ for RP it-have. 2 S done 'Tell me why you did it.'
b. L'ho fatto [perché/*per cuil'hai fatto tu].
it-have.1s why/* for RP it-have. 2 S done you
'I did it because you did it.'
(cannot mean: 'I did it for the same reason why you did it.')
c. L'ho fatto per il motivo [HR *perché/per cuil'hai fatto tu]. it-have. 1 s for the reason *why /for RP it-have. 2 S done you "I did it for the same reason why you did it."

Table 3. Distribution of wh-words in Italian

|  | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{2}$ | $* / \sqrt{n}$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $*$ | $*$ |

Specific comments. Wherto As shown in (36b), Italian does not allow FRs (nor MRs) with
che $\cos a$ 'what'. This may be due to the complex nature of che cosa, which is literally 'what thing'. Unlike phrasal wh-words, wh-words that are part of more complex wh-phrases are usually not acceptable in FRs crosslinguistically: e.g. I read what (*book) you read. In Italian, the reduced form cosa can be used with the same meaning as che $\cos a$ in wh-interrogatives without any distributional differences, as far as I can tell:
(41) a. (Che) cosa vuoi mangiare stasera? what thing want.2S eat.INF tonight 'What do you want to eat tonight?'
b. Ti ho chiesto (che) cosa non ti piace dime. to-you.CL have. 1 S asked what thing not to-you.CL pleases of me 'I asked you what you don't like about me.'

On the other hand, FRs can never be introduced by che $\cos a$, while FRs can be introduced by cosa, though there is variation among the speakers. They are colloquial and slightly marginal for me, but still definitely better than FRs with che cosa; Acquaviva (1989) and speakers from Turin find them fully acceptable. ${ }^{18}$

Why. Perché 'why' can introduce wh-INTs like (40a) and clauses like (40b). Despite satisfying most of the requirements, (40b) is not a FR. It is a clause with a wh-word and can be replaced with a PP. Nevertheless, it has no gap, neither in argument nor in adjunct position. (40b) does not say that you did what you did for any particular reason; it only says that the reason why I did it was because you did it.

### 1.4.2.3 A Slavic language: Polish

General comments. All phrasal wh-words can introduce both FRs and wh-INTs in Polish,

[^9]except dlaczego 'why'. Gdzie 'where', kiedy 'when', and jak 'how' can also introduce HRs. ${ }^{19}$ Ktorzy introduces only HRs and can occur with either animate or inanimate heads.
(42) who
a. Powiedz mi ${ }_{\text {whinfi kto }} /$ kitórzy pracuje ciężko].

Tell me who.NOM/*RP.NOM.M.S works hard
'Tell me who works hard."
b. [rR Kto /*którzy ciężko pracuje] czuje się zmęczony ale szczęsliwy. who.NOM/*RP.NOM.M.S hard works feels self tired but happy
'He who works hard feels tired but happy.'
c. Ludzie [hR *kto /latórzy pracuja ciężko] czują się zmęczeni ale szczęsliwi. People *who.NOM/RP.NOM.M.S work.3P hard feel.3P self tired but happy
'People who work hard feel tired but happy.'
(43) what
a. Powiedz mi [wh-INT co $/ *$ które $/ * \mathrm{co}$ ugotowałes]. ${ }^{20}$

Tell me what $/{ }^{\text {RP.ACC.N.S }} / *$ COMP cooked. 2 S
'Tell me what you cooked.'
b. Posmakowalam [FR co $/ * k t o ́ r e \quad / * \mathrm{co}$ ugotowałes].
tasted. 1 S what/*RP.ACC.N.S/*COMP cooked. 2 S
'I tasted what you cooked.'
c. Posmakowalam jedzenie [HR $*$ co /które /co ugotowałes].
tasted.1s food *what/RP.ACC.N.S/COMP cooked.2S
'I tasted the food you cooked.'

19 Citko (in progress) shows that Polish phrasal wh-words can introduce what she calls 'light-headed relatives', i.e. relative clauses whose head does not contain an overt noun but only a pronominal or determiner-like element.
${ }^{20} \mathrm{Co}$ is both the nominative/accusative form of the wh-word for what in wh-INTs and FRs and the complementizer that can introduce HRs. Nevertheless, Fisiak et al. (1978) and Citko (in progress) convincingly show the distribution of the two co never overlaps.
(44) where
a. Nie wiem [wh-NT gdzie moi rodzice się urodzili]. not know where my parents self were-born. 3 P 'I don't know where my parents were bom.'
b.? Urodzilam się [FR guzie moi rodzice się urodzili].

Was-bom. Is self where my parents self were-bom. $3 P$
'I was bom where my parents were bom.'
c. Urodzilam się w tym samym miescie [hr guzie moi rodzice sie urodzili]. Was-bom. Is self in this same town where my parents self were-born.3p
'I was born in the (same) town where my parents were bom.'
(45) when
a. Zapytałam ciebie [wh-INT kiedy Maria przyjechała]. asked. is you.ACC when Maria arrived. 3 S 'I asked you when Maria arrived.'
b. Wyjechalam [FR kiedy Maria przyjechaka].
left.1s when Maria arrived.3s
'I left when Maria arrived.'
c. Wyjechałam w momencie [hr kiedy Maria przyjechała].
left. 1 s in moment when Maria arrived. 3 s
'I left at the moment when Maria arrived.'
(46) how
a. Powiedz mi [wh-int jak to zrobileś].
tell me how it did. 2 s
'Tell me how you did it.'
b. [FR Jak to zrobisz], na pewno będzie dobrze. how it do.FUT. 2 S certainly be.FUT. 3 S good
'The way you do it will certainly be good.'
c. Zrobiłem to w ten sam sposob [hr jalk ty to zrobiłeś]. did.1s it in this same way how you it did. 2 S
'I did it in the same way you did it.'
(47) why
a. Powiedz me [wh-Int dlaczego to zrobileś]. tell me for-what/why it did.2s 'Tell me why you did it.'
b.*Zrobikem to [FR dlaczego ty to zrobileś]. did. 1 S it for-what/why you it did. 2 S
('I did it for the same reason why you did it.')
c. * Zrobilem to $z$ tego samego powodu [hr dlaczego ty to zrobiześ].
did.1s it from this same reason why you it did. 2 s
('I did it for the same reason why you did it.')
$c^{\prime}$. Zrobilem to dlatego [hr dlaczego ty to zrobileś].
did.1s it for-that for-what/why you it did. 2 S
'I did it for the same reason why you did it.'

Table 4. Distribution of wh-words in Polish

|  | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $* / \sqrt{2}$ |

Specific comments. How. The form jak 'how' is three-ways ambiguous. It can behave like how and introduce manner wh-INTs and FRs, or it can introduce a temporal clausal adjunct like before, or, finally, it can behave like if and introduce the protasis of a conditional (Citko 2000). The context may help to disambiguate, as in (46b) above.

### 1.4.2.4 A Finno-Ugric language: Estomian

General comments. Estonian exhibits a mixed pattern. Mida 'what', keda 'who', and kus 'where' can introduce wh-INTs, FRs and HRs. Millal 'when' can introduce only wh-INTs (cf. German, Dutch, West Flemish for a similar restriction). Kuidas 'how' and miks 'why' can introduce wh-INTs and HRs, but not FRs. As for miks 'why', Estonian patterns like English: it can introduce wh-INTs and HRs, but not FRs. On the other hand, the ban on FRs introduced by kuidas 'how', but not on HRs, is unusual.

Estonian has an extremely rich case system. In the glosses below, PART stands for partitive case, INE for inessive case ( $\mathrm{in}, a t$ ), and ADE for adessive case (on). The other abbreviations for case marking are the usual ones.
(48) who
a. Ütle mulle, [wh-NT keda sina imetled].
tell me who.PART you admire
'Tell me who you admire.'
b. Ma imetlen (?neid) [FR keda sina imetled].

I admire (?those) who.PART you admire 'I admire those who you admire.'
c. Ma imetlen inimesi, [ HR keda sina imetled].

I admire people.PART who.PART you admire
${ }^{\text {'I }}$ amire the people you admire.'
(49) what
a. Ütle mulle, [wh-NT mida $\mathrm{sa}^{21}$ küpsetasid]. tell me what.PART you cooked 'Tell me what you cooked.'
b. Ma maitsesin, [ FR mida sa küpsetasid].

I tasted what.PART you cooked
'I tasted what you cooked.'
c. Ma maitsesin toitu, [HR mida sa küpsetasid].

I tasted food.PART.PL what.PART you cooked 'I tasted the food you cooked.'
(50) where
a. Ma ei tea, [wh-int kus mu vanemad sündisid].

I not know where my parents came-to-birth 'I don't know where my parents were born.'
b. Ma sündisin (?seal), [re kus mu vanemad(-ki) sündisid].

I came-to-birth (?there) where my parents(-too) came-to-birth 'I was born where my parents (too) were born.'
c. Ma sündisin sama-s limna-s, [HR kus mu vanemad(-ki) sündisid]. I came-to-birth same.INE town.INE where my parents(-too) came-to-birth 'I was born in the (same) town where my parents (too) were born.'

[^10](51) when
a. Ma küsisin sult, [wh-INT millal/*kui Maria saabus]. I asked you when/*as Maria arrived 'I asked you when Maria arrived.'
b. Ma lahkusin (siis), [ ${ }^{*}$ minilial/kui Maria saabus]. ${ }^{22}$

I left then *when/as Maria arrived.
'I left when Maria arrived.'
c. Ma lahkusin hetkel [fr * millal/Lui Maria saabus].

I left moment.ADE * when/as Maria arrived
'I left at the moment when Maria arrived.'
(52) how
a. Ütle mulle, [wh-nt kuidas/*magu sa seda tegid].
tell me how $/ *$ as you it did
'Tell me how you did it.'
b. Ma tegin seda (nii) [*kuidas/nagu sina seda tegid]. ${ }^{23}$

I did it so *how las you it did
'I did it how you did it.'
c. Ma tegin seda sama moodi [HR ?kuidas/magu sina seda tegid].

I did it same way how las you it did
'I did it in the same way you did it.'
(53) why
a. Ütle mulle, [wh-INT miks sa seda tegid].
tell me why you it did
'Tell me why you did it.'
b. *Ma tegin seda [Fr miks sina seda tegid].

I did it why you it did
c. Ma tegin seda samal põhjusel, [HR miks sina seda tegid].

I did it same.ADE reason.ADE why you it did
'I did it for the same reason why you did it.'

[^11]Table 5. Distribution of wh-words in Estonian

|  | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $?$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $?$ | $*$ | $*$ | $*$ |
| MRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $?$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |

Specific comments. Who and Where. FRs introduced only by keda 'who' or kus 'where' sound slightly less acceptable than the corresponding HRs. Notice that, according to our definition, the bracketed clauses in (48b) and (50b) are no longer FRs when the wh-clause is immediately preceded by demonstratives like neid 'those' and seal 'there', respectively. They are HRs with a determiner-like HEAD (cf. the very end of §1.1).

### 1.4.2.5 A Semitic language: Hebrew

General comments. Hebrew is the paradigmatic language as far as FRs are concerned. It exhibits a very clear pattern with no exceptions. The equivalents of who, what, where, when, and how in Hebrew can all be used to form both wh-INTs and FRs, but they can never occur in HRs. FRs and wh-INTs are distinguishable in form because FRs always require the wh-word to be followed by the clitic complementizer še-, while wh-INTs never allow the complementizer to occur. (še- has been glossed as COMP in both HRs and FRs.) Also, unlike wh-INTs, FRs in object position can or must be preceded by the accusative marker $e t$, as in (54b) and (55b).
(54) who
a. Tagid li [wh-iNT *(mi) oved kaše].
tell me *(who) works hard 'Tell me who works hard.'
b. Anima'aric (et $)^{24}\left[\mathrm{FR}{ }^{*}\right.$ (min) še-oved kaše].
$I$ admire (ACC) *(who) COMP-works hard
'I admire the one/those who work(s) hard.'
c. Ani ma'aric (et ha-)anašim [HR (*mi) še-ovdim kaše].

I admire (ACC the-)people (*who) COMP-work. 3 P hard
'I admire (the) people who work hard.'
(55) what
a. Tagid li [wh-inT *(ma) Dan bišel]. tell me *(what) Dan cooked 'Tell me what Dan cooked.'
b. Axalti et [fr *(ma) še-Dan bišel].
ate. IS ACC *(what) COMP-Dan cooked
'I ate what Dan cooked.'
c. Axalti (et ha-)oxel [hr (*ma) še-Dan bišel]. ate. 1S (ACC the-)food (*what) COMP-Dan cooked 'I ate (the) food that Dan cooked.'
(56) where
a. Anilo yode'a [wh-NT*(eyfo) ha-horim šeli noldu]. I not know *(where) the-parents mine be-born 'I don't know where my parents were born.
b. Noladeti [fr *(eyfo) še-ha-horim šeli noldu]. be-born. 1 S *(where) COMP-the-parent mine be-born 'I was born where my parents were born.'
c. Noladeti be-oto makom [hr (*eyfo) še-ha-horim šeli noldu ?(b-o)]. be-born. 1 s in-same place (*where) COMP-the-parents mine be-born ?(in-it) 'I was born in the (same) town where my parents were bom.'

[^12](57) when
a. Ša'alti otxa [wh-INT ${ }^{*}$ (matay) Rut higi'a]. asked. 1s you *(when) Ruth arrived 'I asked you when Ruth arrived.'
b. Halaxti [FR ${ }^{*}$ (matay) se-Rut higi'a]. ${ }^{25}$ went. is *(when) COMP-Ruth arrived 'I left when Ruth arrived.'
c. Halaxti ba-rega [ur (*matay) še-Rut higi'a]. went.1s in-the-moment (*when) COMP-Ruth arrived 'I left at the moment when Ruth arrived.'
(58) how
a. Tagid $1 \mathrm{li}\left[\right.$ wh-INT ${ }^{*}(\mathrm{eyx})$ Dan asa et $\left.z e\right]$. tell me *(how) Dan did ACC this 'Tell me how Dan did it.'
b. Asiti et ze [fr ${ }^{*}$ (eyx) še-Dan asa et ze]. did. Is ACC this *(how) COMP-Dan did ACC this 'I did it how Dan did it.'
c. Asiti et ze be-ota derex [hr (*eyx) še-Dan asa et ze]. did. Is ACC this in-same way (*how) COMP-Dan did ACC this 'I did it in the (same) way Dan did it.'
(59) why
a. Tagid $1 \mathrm{i}\left[{ }_{\text {wh- }}\right.$ NT ${ }^{*}$ (lama) Dan asa et ze$]$.
tell me *(why) Dan did ACC this
'Tell me why you did it.'
b. \%Asiti et ze [fr* ${ }^{*}$ (lama) še-Dan asa et ze]. ${ }^{26}$ did.1S ACC this *(why) COMP-Dan did ACC this 'I did it because Dan did it.'
(It cannot mean: "I did it for the same reason why Dan did it.")
c. Asiti et ze me-ota siba [hr (*lama) še-Dan asa et ze]. did. 1 A ACC this from-same reason (*why) COMP-Dan did ACC this 'I did it for the same reason why Dan did it.'

[^13]Table 6. Distribution of wh-words in Hebrew

|  | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $*$ | $*$ | $*$ | $*$ | $*$ |

Specific comments. Why. The wh-word lama 'why' seems to be able to occur in what looks like a FR in (59b), but the intended meaning makes clear that we are dealing with a case of homophony. Lama in the embedded clause in (59b) acts like a subordinate conjunction rather than a wh-word licensing an adjunct gap. It is interpreted as 'for the reason that', while it can never mean 'for the reason why'. This is similar to what we saw above for the equivalent of $w h y$ in Italian (cf. 1.4.2.2).

### 1.5. Some conclusions on the distribution of wh-words

The data above and in Appendix 1 clearly show that there are many languages that make use of (all or some) phrasal wh-words to form non-interrogative clauses, i.e. FRs. Some of these languages use the same wh-words as relative pronouns to introduce HRs as well (e.g. Estonian). Others do that only partially (e.g. English) or with just one phrasal wh-word (e.g. Italian). The rest either form HRs with relative pronouns that are morphologically unrelated to wh-words (e.g. German) or do not make use of relative pronouns at all (e.g. Hebrew).

Interestingly, I have not yet found any language that uses two unrelated sets of elements to form wh-INTs and HRs in which FRs pattern with HRs rather than wh-INTs. I take this as strong initial evidence that 1) FRs are not a special case of HRs, namely HRs without a head; and 2) FRs and wh-NTs are closely related, in particular their
wh-words are the same lexical items. I will discuss these claims in turn.
If $\operatorname{FRs}$ were just a special case of HRs (e.g. HRs with a phonologically null head), we would expect to find at least the following. First, HRs should always be introduced by the same lexical items that introduce FRs. ${ }^{27}$ But this is not the case, as the data above and in Appendix 1 show very clearly. For instance, wh-words can never introduce HRs in German nor in Hebrew. Second, we should find languages that use one class of lexical items to form HRs and FRs, and another class, morphologically unrelated, to form wh-INTs. I have not yet found any language like this. Therefore, I conclude that FRs are not just a special case of HRs. Incidentally, this conclusion is in contrast with most of the (syntactic) literature on FRs, as we will see in Chapter 2.

If the wh-words that introduce both wh-INTs and FRs were not the same lexical items, the only other option we would be left with is that they are ambiguous. Tertium non datur. We would then be dealing with massive cross-linguistic categorial lexical ambiguity: 'categorial' because it concerns a class of lexical items (i.e. wh-words) and not just one element; 'cross-linguistic' because it would be attested in many different languages; finally, 'massive' because it would concern at least 75 lexical items. ${ }^{28}$ But lexical ambiguity does not work like this. It is intrinsically non-systematic and language specific. Therefore, wh-words that occur in wh-INTs and FRs are not ambiguous. The

[^14]only option we are left with is that they must be the same lexical items. This conclusion is particularly important. If the wh-words in wh-INTs and FRs are the same, whatever we conclude about their meaning in one construction should apply to the other as well. In particular, we could look at the semantic contribution of wh-words in FRs and understand their semantic contribution in wh-INTs at the same time. This is one of the main goals of the present work.

One more observation before concluding. No language can form FRs by means of the wh-word for why. This is the only phrasal wh-word that consistently fails to introduce FRs across the languages I have looked at so far.

In the next chapters, a semantic analysis of FRs and wh-words will be given, which is based on the definition, data and conclusions presented in this chapter. Further data will presented and discussed.

## CHAPTER 2

## Maximality and the Semantics of DP-like Standard Free Relatives

### 2.1. Overview of the chapter

This chapter is mainly devoted to an analysis of the semantic contribution of a subset of FRs that I labeled DP-like standard free relatives. I will start by defining standard free relatives ( $\$ 2.2$ ). Then, I will distinguish DP-like standard free relatives from PP-like standard free relatives to conclude with the generalization that DP-like standard free relatives semantically behave like definite DPs, i.e. they always denote an entity (§ 2.3). The main part of the chapter will be devoted to a semantic analysis that accounts for this generalization (§2.4). Then, I will compare my analysis with other proposals that have been suggested ( $\$ 2.5$ ). Finally, I will briefly discuss the open issue of the syntactic structure of DP-like standard free relatives (§ 2.6).

### 2.2. Standard free relatives

I call standard free relatives ${ }^{1}$ (henceforth, standard FRs) FRs that 1) are introduced by "bare" wh-words and 2) do not occur in the complement position of existential predicates. The first restriction excludes eever free relatives, i.e. FRs introduced by wh-words with the -ever suffix or its equivalent across languages, like $I$ will eat [FR whatever you cook]. Their semantic properties will be discussed in Chapter 4. The second

[^15]restriction excludes existential free relatives, i.e. FRs that occur in the complement position of some existential predicates and can be replaced and paraphrased with indefinites. Existential FRs are not found in Germanic (with the exception of Yiddish), but they are widely attested across the other languages that have standard FRs. Existential FRs will be dealt with in Chapter 3. An example from Italian is given in (1).
(1) Non ho [ FR chi mandare alla conferenza].
not have. 1 s who to-send to-the conference
'I don't have anybody to send to the conference.'
What is the semantic contribution of standard FRs? Standard FRs can always be replaced and paraphrased with DPs or PPs. The English examples from Chapter 1 are repeated in (2) below.
(2) a. I'll marry [ FR who you choose].
$\mathrm{a}^{\prime}$. I'll marry [dp the person you choose].
b. I tasted [ FR what Adam cooked].
b'. I tasted [Dp the food/things Adam cooked].
c. You can't smoke [ FR where the kids are playing].
$c$ '. You can't smoke [pp in the places where the kids are playing].
d. I left [fr when Flavio arrived].
d'. I left [pp at the same time that Flavio arrived].
e. I did it [rr how you did it].
e'. I did it [pp in the way you did it].
Examples from other languages were given in the cross-linguistic section of Chapter 1 and in the Appendix. The c. example of each triplet contained a DP or PP with a $H R$ that was a close paraphrase of the FR in the b. example. In brief, standard FRs look like clauses, but semantically behave like DPs or PPs.

### 2.3. DP-like standard free relatives and PP-like standard free relatives

### 2.3.1. DP-HiLe standard ree relatives

I call a DP-like standard $\mathbb{E R}$ a standard $F R$ that can be replaced and paraphrased with a DP and occurs in an argument position (subject, direct/indirect object, object of preposition). Examples of DP-like standard FRs in different syntactic positions are given in (3), immediately followed by the result of replacing them with a DP.
(3) FRs in subject position
a. [ ER What you just said] doesn't make much sense.
b. [DP The things you just said] don't make much sense.
(4) FRs in direct object position
a. You are not gonna meet [FR who I am going out with].
b. You are not gonna meet [Dp the person/people I am going out with].
(5) FRs in indirect object position
a. I gave [FR what you wrote] the highest grade I've ever given in my entire teaching career.
b. I gave [DP your paper] the highest grade I've ever given in my entire teaching career.
(6) FRs in object of preposition position
a. I want to be hired for [ FR what I do as a researcher], not for [ FR who I sleep with].
b. I want to be hired for [bp the work I do as a researcher], not for [Dp the (kind of) people I sleep with].

Although standard FRs introduced by who and what are more common and sound somehow more natural, DP-like standard FRs can also be introduced by where, when, and how.
(7) where
a. I really liked [Er where we had dinner last night].
a'. I really liked [ pp the place where we had dinner last night].
b. [ FR Where I went on vacation last year] was really fabulous.
b'. [op The place I went on vacation last year] was really fabulous.
(8) when
a. $\%$ I hate [rR when you yell like that]. ${ }^{2}$
a'. I hate [Dp the times/situations when you yell like that].
b. Our first date and [FR when he kissed me for the first time] will stay in my memory forever.
$b^{\prime}$. Our first date and [bp the moment he kissed me for the first time] will stay in my memory forever.
(9) how
a. I really hate [fr how he behaves when he gets high].
a'. I really hate [pp the way(s) he behaves when he gets high].
b. [FR How she did it] turned out to be very expensive.
b'. [Dp The way she did it] turned out to be very expensive.
c. You should pay some attention to [FR how she works]. ${ }^{3}$
$c^{\prime}$. You should pay some attention to [Dp the way she works].
d. This is [FR how he always flung his hat onto the hallstand]. ${ }^{4}$
$d^{\prime}$. This is [FR the way he always flung his hat onto the hallstand].
f. \% The prefixing thematic vowel carries no meaning in itself, though it is often changed in different verbal moods, similar to [FR how the thematic [a] in Spanish "habl-a-s" becomes [e] in the subjunctive "habl-e-s"]. ${ }^{5}$
f. The prefixing thematic vowel carries no meaning in itself, though it is often changed in different verbal moods, similar to [DP the way the thematic [a] in Spanish "habl-a-s" becomes $[\mathrm{e}]$ in the subjunctive "habl-e-s"].

### 2.3.2. PP-like standard free relatives

I call PP-like standard FRs all standard FRs that are not DP-like standard FRs. In other words, PP-like standard FRs are either standard FRs that can be replaced and paraphrased with a PP (or a DP ) in an adjunct position or with a PP in a complement position (i.e. an argument position that is different from the subject position). Only standard FRs

[^16]introduced by where, when, and how can occur as PP-like standard FRs. Examples are given in (10) (see (2c-e) above for more).
(10) a. I went [ FR where you told me to], but I couldn't find anything.
$a^{\prime}$. I went [pp to the place where you told me to], but I couldn't find anything. ${ }^{6}$
b. [FR When you say goodbye], I die a little.
$b^{\prime}$. [op Every time you say goodbye], I die a little.
$b^{\prime}$ ". [pp On the occasions you say goodbye], I die a little.
c. I studied for the final [rr how you studied for it], but you did better.
c'. I studied for the final [pp in the same way you studied for it], but you did better.
In (10a), the standard FR, introduced by where, occurs in the complement position of the matrix verb. Though this is an argument position, the $F R$ is a PP-like standard $F R$ because it can be replaced and paraphrased with a PP (10a'). In (10b), the standard FR introduced by when occurs in an adjunct position; therefore, it is a PP-like standard FR, although it can be replaced and paraphrased with either a DP $\left(10 b^{\prime}\right)^{7}$ or a PP (10b"). Finally, the standard FR introduced by how in (10c) is a PP-like standard FR, since it both occurs in an adjunct position and can be replaced and paraphrased with a PP ( $10 \mathrm{c}^{\prime}$ ).

### 2.3.3. Standard free relatives introduced by why?

In English, there are non-interrogative wh-clauses introduced by why, like the bracketed ones in (11a,b). Although they may look like DP-like standard FRs, I believe there is

[^17]evidence that they are HRs with an elided HEAD. The HEAD can be elided in this context because its content is fully recoverable from the wh-word why without ambiguity: it is always something like the reason. If so, then (11a) and (11b) have exactly the same syntactic structure as ( $11 a^{\prime}$ ) and ( $11 b^{\prime}$ ), respectively.
(11) a. This is [why he never laughs].
a'. This is [ Dp the reason why he never laughs].
b. I haven't thought about [why he left so soon].
b' I haven't thought about [pp the reason why he left so soon].

One piece of evidence against (11a,b) being DP-like standard FRs is that, as we just saw, where, when, and how can very naturally introduce PP-like standard FRs, while why never can. For instance, the bracketed FR in (12a) is an example of a PP-like standard FR introduced by how and it is truth-conditionally equivalent to the bracketed PP in (12a'). On the other hand, (12b) can never mean what ( $12 b^{\prime}$ ) means, because (12b) is totally unacceptable.
(12) a. I did it [ER how you did it].
a'. I did it [pp in the same way that you did it].
b. *I did it [why you did it].
b'. I did it [pp for the (same) reason (why) you did it].
Cross-linguistic evidence supports this conclusion as well. If why could actually introduce a FR, we would expect some of the languages that cannot use their equivalent of why as relative pronoun still to be able to use it to introduce FRs. Languages like Italian or Hebrew, which cannot use the equivalent of interrogative why as a relative pronoun, cannot use it in what would appear to be a DP-like standard FR either. (13) shows this pattem for Italian.
(13) a. * Questo è [perché non ride mai]. this is why not laughs never ('This is why he never laughs.')
a'. Questo è [il motivo *perché/ per cui non ride mai]. this is the reason * why / for REL not laughs never 'This is the reason why he never laughs.'

### 2.3.4. Generalization about the semantic contribution of DP-like standard FRs

To sum up, all and only standard FRs in an argument position that can be replaced and paraphrased with a DP are DP-like standard FRs. All other standard FRs are PP-like standard FRs. With this distinction in hand, we can state the generalization about the semantic contribution of DP-like standard FRs as follows:
(14) DP-like standard FRs always denote an entity, i.e. they behave like definite DPs.

The remainder of the chapter is mainly devoted to discussing the data that support this generalization and trying to account for it in a principled way.

### 2.4. The semantics of DP-like standard free relatives

### 2.4.1. The external semantics of DP-like standard free relatives ${ }^{8}$

The hypothesis that I want to argue for that DP-like standard FRs always denote an entity, rather then a set or any other semantic object, and that this entity is exactly the same as the one that definite DPs denote. In order to do so, I will first introduce Link's (1983) proposal for the semantics of definite DPs, so that we have a precise definition of

[^18]the object definite DPs denote (\$ 2.4.1.1). Then, following Jacobson (1995), I will extend Link's analysis to DP-like standard FRs (§ 2.4.1.2). Finally, I will give some evidence in favor of the empirical claim that DP-like standard FRs denote maximal entities (§ 2.4.1.3).

### 2.4.1.1 The semamtics of definite DPs (Link 1983)

Link (1983) proposes an elegantly unified semantic analysis for singular and plural definite DPs, according to which they both refer to the maximal element of the set denoted by the NP. ${ }^{9}$

The main intuition behind this proposal is that we can conceive and use language to refer and attribute properties to both simple objects (atomic entities) and complex objects (plural entities). The latter result from grouping atomic entities and/or other plural entities and conceiving the result as a unit. Link formalizes this notion with an operation called sum and uses the symbol $\oplus$ to indicate that two entities have been grouped together by means of sum.

For instance, an egg and a carrot each are atomic entities. We can attribute to them separate properties. We can believe of the egg that it is big and of the carrot that it is small. But we can also look at them as just one entity, i.e. eggĐcarrot, and attribute properties to it. For instance, we may think that the egg and the carrot together constitute a good snack, but just the egg or just the carrot would not. So what makes the snack a good one is neither the atomic entity egg nor the atomic entity carrot, but the entity

[^19]egg $\oplus$ carrot. Since this entity is made of smaller units, it is no longer an atomic entity, but a plural one. If we now take another atomic entity, e.g. an onion, into consideration, we can add it to the plural entity we already have, i.e. egg $\oplus$ carrot, and obtain another plural entity, i.e. egg $\oplus$ carrot $\oplus$ onion, which is now made of three atomic entities; and so on and so forth. ${ }^{10}$

We have a notion of entities being "bigger" than the entities they are made of. The plural entity egg $\oplus$ carrot $\oplus$ onion is made of "smaller" units: an egg, a carrot and an onion; or egg $\oplus$ carrot and an onion; or an egg and carrot $\oplus$ onion; or egg $\oplus$ onion and a carrot. Those smaller units are all "part of" $\operatorname{egg} \oplus$ carrot $\oplus$ onion. The egg is part of the plural entity egg $\oplus$ carrot, therefore egg $\oplus$ carrot is bigger than the egg. Similarly, the plural entity $\operatorname{egg} \oplus$ carrot is part of the plural entity egg $\oplus$ carrot $\oplus$ onion. Link (1983) formalizes these intuitions by means of the part-of relation ( $\leq$ ). ${ }^{11}$ Given a set of atomic entities and all of the possible plural entities built by summing the atomic entities, there will always be an entity that is bigger than all the others. This is called the maximal entity of that set. A general definition of the maximal entity of a set is given in (15).
(15) Maximal entity $\max _{\mathrm{p}}$ of a set of entities P
$\max _{p}=x$ such that $x \in P$ and $\forall y \in P y \leq x$
In the example above, it is easy to see that egg $\oplus$ carrot $\oplus$ onion is the maximal entity. It can be proved that if there is a maximal entity, it is unique, and that the maximal entity is the only entity of the set such that all the entities are part of it. Maximal entities are not

[^20]necessarily plural entities. For instance, the maximal entity of the singleton set containing just an egg is the egg itself, i.e. an atomic entity.

Let us now look at how these ideas can be applied to natural language and to the semantics of definite DPs. If Adam cooked only an egg, then the singular NP thing that Adam cooked will denote the singleton set containing just that egg, i.e. an atomic entity, (16a), while the singular definite DP the thing that Adam cooked will refer to the maximal entity in that set, i.e. the only thing that Adam cooked, i.e. the egg (16b).
(16) If an egg $e$ is the only thing that Adam cooked, then:
a. Singular $N P$ : 【thing that Adam cooked $\rrbracket=\{\mathrm{e}\}$
b. Singular DP: 【the thing that Adam cooked $\rrbracket=\mathrm{e}$

On the other hand, if an egg, a carrot and an onion are the only things that Adam cooked, then the singular NP thing Adam cooked will denote the set containing those three atomic entities (17a). When plural morphology is added to the NP, it has a crucial semantic effect: it closes the set denoted by the singular NP under the sum operation and excludes all the atomic entities. Intuitively, the plural NP things that Adam cooked will denote the set of all the plural entities that can be obtained by summing the egg, the carrot and the onion in all the possible combinations. It can be shown that such a structure has a unique maximal entity, i.e. $\mathrm{e} \oplus \mathrm{c} \oplus \mathrm{o}$. This is the only element of the structure such that all the elements are part of it.

Finally, the plural definite DP the things that Adam cooked will refer to the maximal entity of the set denoted by the plural NP (17c), in the same way that the singular definite DP the thing that Adam cooked above referred to the maximal entity of the set denoted by the singular NP.
(17) If an egg $e$, a carrot $c$ and an onion $o$ are the only things Adam cooked, then:
a. Singulor NP: $\llbracket$ thing that Adam cooked $\rrbracket=\{e, c, 0\}$
b. Plural NP: [things that Adam cooked] $=\left\{\begin{array}{c}\mathrm{e} \oplus \mathrm{c} \oplus \mathrm{o} \\ \uparrow \\ \mathrm{N} \oplus \mathrm{c} \mathrm{e} \oplus \mathrm{o} \mathrm{c} \oplus \mathrm{o}\end{array}\right\}$
c. Plural DP: [施e things that Adam cooked] $=\mathrm{e} \oplus \mathrm{c} \oplus \mathrm{o}$

### 2.4.1.2 DP-like standard free relatives denote maximal entities

Following Jacobson (1995), ${ }^{12}$ DP-like standard FRs can be given a semantic analysis along the lines of Link's (1983) proposal for definite DPs: DP-like standard FRs denote maximal entities too. For instance, in the usual situation in which an egg $e$ is the only thing that Adam cooked, the DP-like standard FR in (18a) denotes the singular maximal entity of the set of things that Adam cooked (18b). Since this set contains only one element, its only element and its maximal entity coincide and are both singular entities. As we saw in the previous section, this is the same entity that the corresponding singular definite DP denotes (18c). Notice that the denotation of the corresponding plural definite DP would be undefined in this situation, since a plural definite DP can only denote a plural maximal entity (18d).
(18) If an egg $e$ was the only thing that Adam cooked, then:
a. Jie ate [rr what Adam cooked].
b. $\llbracket[$ Fr what Adam cooked $] \rrbracket=\mathrm{e}$
c. $\llbracket[$ FR what Adam cooked $] \rrbracket=\llbracket[$ singular definite Dp the thing that Adam cooked $] \rrbracket$
d. $[$ [.plural definite $p$ p the things that Adam cooked $\rrbracket \rrbracket=$ undefined

On the other hand, if an egg, a carrot and an onion are all and only the things that

[^21]Adam cooked, the very same DP-like standard FR in (19a) now denotes the plural maximal entity of the set of things that Adam cooked (19b), like the plural definite $D P$ in (19c). It is the corresponding singular definite DP that is now undefined, since, as we saw, singular definite DPs can only refer to singular maximal entities.
(19) If an egg $e$, a carrot $c$ and an onion $o$ are the only things Adam cooked, then:
a. Jie ate [FR what Adam cooked].
b. $\llbracket[$ FR what Adam cooked $] \rrbracket=\mathrm{e} \oplus \mathrm{c} \oplus \mathrm{o}$
c. $\llbracket\left[{ }_{\text {Fr }}\right.$ what Adam cooked $] \rrbracket=\llbracket[$ pr the things that Adam cooked $] \rrbracket$
d. $\llbracket[$ s singular definite Dp the thing that Adam cooked $] \rrbracket=$ undefined

Therefore, DP-like standard FRs and definite DPs are truth-conditionally equivalent, except for the fact that the former do not express any restrictions about the singular $v s$. plural nature of the maximal entity they denote, while definite DPs do. This is due to the fact that wh-words in DP-like standard FRs are morphologically singular in English and this makes the whole DP-like standard FR singular, as shown by the singular agreement on both the matrix predicate and the FR predicate in (20).
(20) [rR What smellis/*smell good] often tastes/* taste good too.

Although Jacobson (1995) mainly discusses DP-like standard FRs introduced by what, all the kinds of DP-like standard FRs can be analyzed as referring to maximal entities, as shown in (21)-(24).
(21) who

If I am dating Andrea and Emanuele, then:
a. You are not gonna meet [rR who I am going out with].
b. $[[$ [rR who $I$ am going out with $]]=$ Andrea $\oplus$ Emanuele
c. $\llbracket[\mathrm{FR}$ who I am going out with $] \rrbracket=\llbracket[\mathrm{Dr}$ the people I am going out with $] \rrbracket$.
(22) where

If we went to the restaurant Alto Palato last night, then:
a. I really liked [FR where we had dinner last night].
b. $[[$ Fr where we had dinner last night $]]=$ Alto Palato
c. $\llbracket[F P$ where we had dinner last night $] \rrbracket=\llbracket[$ pe the place where we had dinner last night $]]$.
(23) whent

If $S$ is the moment/situation in which he kissed me for the first time (e.g., in my bedroom on November $1^{\text {st }} 1997$ at $9: 30 \mathrm{pm}$ while Satie's $j^{\text {èr }}$ Gnossienne was playing), then:
a. Our first date and [FR when he kissed me for the first time] will stay in my memory forever.
b. $[[$ Fr when he kissed me for the first time $] \rrbracket=\mathrm{S}$
c. $[[$ FR when he kissed me for the first time $]]=\llbracket[$ DP the moment we kissed for the first time]]
(24) how

If $\mathrm{H}_{1}$ and $\mathrm{H}_{2}$ are the ways he behaves when he gets high (e.g. he laughs like an idiot all the time $\left(\mathrm{H}_{1}\right)$ and does not remember what I asked him to do $\left(\mathrm{H}_{2}\right)$ ), then:
a. I really hate [ FR how he behaves when he gets high].
b. $\llbracket\left[\left[_{\text {FR }}\right.\right.$ how he behaves when he gets high $] \rrbracket=\mathrm{H}_{1} \oplus \mathrm{H}_{2}$
c. $\left[\left[\left[_{\mathrm{FR}}\right.\right.\right.$ how he behaves when he gets high $\left.]\right]=[\mathrm{DP}$ the ways he behaves when he gets high].

In order to treat the DP-like standard FRs introduced by where, when, and how in (22)-(24), we need to assume that our ontology also contains entities like places, times/situations and manners/ways (besides the usual animate and inanimate entities) and that they can be summed to form plural entities. I think this a plausible extension of our ontology. We can predicate properties of places, times and manners, in the same way as we do with human beings and objects. A place can be ugly, a time can be wrong, and a manner can be rude. Also, we can predicate properties that apply to sums of places, times and manners, but not their atomic components. For instance, if we claim that two places like Rome and Paris together have nine million inhabitants, this is true only for the sum Paris $\oplus$ Rome, but not the atomic places Rome and Paris separately. Similarly, a single time/occasion when a friend gets mad at you may not make you change your mind about
him. On the other hand, if this happens many times, all those times (i.e. the maximal time entity) can make you decide that in the end he is not really a good friend. Finally, if your neighbor always behaves in a nice way with you (e.g. he smiles and says hi), you may think he is a nice guy. On the other hand, if he always behaves in a rude way (e.g. he always ignores you and never says hi), you may thing he is not a nice guy. But if he behaves in both ways at the same time (e.g. he smiles at you first and then ignores you rudely), you may think he is just a weirdo.

In conclusion, I have argued that DP-like standard FRs always denote singular or plural maximal entities, along the lines of Link's (1983) proposal for definite DPs. Jacobson (1995) was the first one to suggest such an analysis for DP-like standard FRs in English. She actually does not distinguish between DP-like standard FRs and PP-like standard FRs. Also, she considers standard FRs and eever FRs to be truth-conditionally equivalent. Neither of these assumptions can be fully correct. In Chapter 4, I will show that standard FRs are not truth-conditionally equivalent to -ever FRs and in Chapter 3, we will see that PP-like standard FRs do not denote the same semantic object as DP-like standard FRs. Jacobson (1995) restricts her attention only to English FRs, and all the examples of DP-like standard FRs she discusses are introduced by the wh-word what. In this section, I suggested that Jacobson's (1995) proposal can be extended to all kinds of DP-like standard FRs as long as we enrich the ontology with entities like places, times/situations, and manners/ways. Finally, I concentrated on English data in this section to make the discussion easier. As far as I can tell, the conclusions I reached above apply to all the
languages with $\operatorname{FRs}$ I have been looking at so far. ${ }^{13}$

### 2.4.1.3 Evidence

I will give three arguments to support the conclusion that DP-like standard FRs always denote maximal entities. First, I will show that DP-like standard FRs can never refer to any other entity but a maximal entity, even when the context strongly favors a nonmaximal reference. Then, I will show that DP-like standard FRs can always be replaced and paraphrased with definite DPs. Finally, I will show that DP-like standard FRs pattern like definite DPs and unlike any other kind of DP as far as their interaction with adverbs of quantification is concerned.

Argument 1. If it were not true that DP-standard FRs (always) denoted a maximal entity, situations should be found in which it would be natural for a DP-standard FR to be interpreted as referring to something smaller than a maximal entity. Here is what looks like a good scenario. Let us assume that Leston just went to Italy for the first time and he tasted lots of good food that he had never tasted before. Of course, there are still plenty of things that he has not tasted yet, not just because Italian cuisine is unbelievably varied and he only visited Milan and Venice for a few days, but also because there are plenty of other (good) culinary traditions around the world. So, during his Italian trip, Leston tasted some dishes he had never tasted before, but certainly not all the dishes he had never tasted before. Therefore, (25a) would be true in this situation, while (25b) would be false or would sound somehow awkward. Now, what about (25c), in which a DP-like standard

[^22]FR has replaced the DP in (25a-b)?
(25) a. On his Italian trip, Leston tasted [indefinite op (some) dishes he had never tasted before].
b. On his Italian trip, Leston tasted [definie Dp (all) the dishes he had never tasted before].
c. On his Italian trip, Leston tasted [re what he had never tasted before].

My consuitants agreed that ( 25 c ) would be false, or at least would sound as awkward as (25b), in the situation above. This shows that the DP-like standard FR must refer to all the dishes Leston had never tasted before, i.e. the maximal entity that results from the sum of the atomic dishes Leston had never tasted before.

A similar case is given in (26) with an example from Italian. Here the scenario is that Paolo is the director of a lab and has the chance to send only one of his fifteen Ph.D. students to a very prestigious conference. Of those, four students have already been to that conference, while eleven have not. In this situation, (26) is false, since it can only mean that Paolo will send eleven students to the conference, i.e. the maximal entity of the students that have never been to the conference, and not just one of them.
(26) Paolo manderà alla conferenza [frechi non c'è ancora andato].

Paolo send.Fut. 3 s to-the conference who not there's yet gone
'Paolo will send to the conference the person/people who hasn't/haven't been there yet.'
Argument 2. DP-like standard FRs can always be paraphrased with definite DPs, which, as we saw earlier, always denote maximal entities. The cross-linguistic examples with a DP-like standard FR given in Chapter 1 and the Appendix are immediately followed by truth-conditionally equivalent examples in which a complex DP containing a HR has replaced the FR. All those complex DPs are definite DPs or equivalents.

For languages with bare DPs (e.g. English), a bare DP can sometimes paraphrase a DP-like standard FR, as in (27).
(27) a. [rR What you find at a garage sale] is usually junk.
b. [DP (The) things you find at a garage sale] are usually junk.

The bare plural DP in (27b) is a pretty accurate paraphrase of the DP-like standard PR in (27a). But this is not a counterexample to my argument. The bare plural can only be interpreted as referring to the maximal entity resulting from the sum of all the things at a garage sale. ${ }^{14}$ In other words, it means all the things at a garage sale, not just some.

Argumerie 3. A less direct piece of evidence in support of the claim that standard FRs denote maximal entities comes from the so-called "quantificational variability effects". Adverbs of quantity (a subset of adverbs of quantification) like for the most part, in part, etc. produce the same truth-conditional effects with DP-like standard FRs (28a) and definite DPs $(28 b, c)$. On the other hand, the result of combining adverbs of quantity with indefinite DPs or quantified DPs is truth-conditionally different and often uninterpretable ( $28 \mathrm{~d}-\mathrm{g}$ ).
(28) a. [FR What you bought] is for the most part expensive.
b. [Dp The things you bought] are for the most part expensive.
c. [DP The stuff you bought] is for the most part expensive.
d. \#[DP Everything you bought] is for the most part expensive.
e. \#[dp One thing you bought] is for the most part expensive.
f. \# [dp Something you bought] is for the most part expensive.
g. \#[dp Some stuff you bought] is for the most part expensive.

The interaction between FRs and adverbs of quantification will be discussed in more detail in Chapter 5.

Further indirect support for our hypothesis about the semantic contribution of DP-like

[^23]standard FRs will be given in $\S 2.5$, where other proposals will be discussed.

### 2.4.2. The internal semantics of DP-like standard free relatives

How do DP-like standard FRs, which look like wh-clauses, end up denoting what definite DPs denote, i.e. maximal entities? In this section, I will show how this result can be obtained compositionally. First, I will briefly state my assumptions about the syntactic structure of DP-like standard FRs ( $\$ 2.4 .2 .1$ ). Then, I will give a compositional analysis of the semantic contribution of DP-like standard FRs (§ 2.4.2.2).

### 2.4.2.1 Assumptions about the syntactic structure of DP-like standard free relatives

I assume that standard FRs have the syntactic structure of CPs. Therefore, the standard FR in (29a) will have the syntactic structure in (29b).
(29) a. Jie ate [rr what Adam cooked].


This assumption looks like the simplest one. Standard FRs can look identical to wh-INTs, as we saw in Chapter 1, and wh-INTs are one of the prototypical cases of CPs. Although there are differences in the syntactic behavior of standard FRs and wh-INTs, I am not aware of any non-stipulative way to account for them by means of differences in their syntactic structures. A brief discussion of some of these differences and the syntactic proposals that have been suggested to account for the FRs is given in § 2.6.

### 2.4.2.2 A compositional semantics for DP-like standard free relatives

In this section, I show how DP-like standard FRs denote a maximal entity compositionally. I start with DP-like standard FRs introduced by who and what (\$ 2.4.2.2.1). First I go through the details of the semantic derivation of an example ( $\$ 2$ 2.4.2.2.1.1) and then I give a more general formulation and discuss some relevant issues ( $\S$ 2.4.2.2.1.2). Then I deal with DP-like standard FRs introduced by where, when, and how (§ 2.4.2.2.2). Finally, I comment on $\delta$ and its crucial role in the semantic derivation of DP-like standard FRs (§ 2.4.2.2.3).

### 2.4.2.2.1DP-like standard free relatives introduced by who and what

### 2.4.2.2.1.1 An example

The sentence in (30a) contains the DP-like standard FR what Adam liked, whose LF representation is given in (30b). The DP-like standard FR has a gap in the complement position of its predicate. A trace occupies the gapped position, if we assume that wh-movement has taken place. The semantic derivation for (30) is given in (31). Comments follow.
(30)
a. Jie ate what Adam liked.

(31) Logical form of the DP-like standard FR in (30)

1. liked $\rightarrow \lambda \times \lambda y[$ like' $(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{y})]$
2. $\mathrm{t}_{1} \rightarrow \mathrm{X}_{1}$
3. Adam $\rightarrow$ a
4. $w h a t_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda x_{1}\left[\text { inanimate }\left(x_{1}\right) \wedge X\left(x_{1}\right)\right]^{15}$
5. [vp liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x} \lambda \mathrm{y}\left[\right.$ like $\left.\mathrm{e}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{y})\right]\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)=\lambda y\left[\right.$ like $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{y})\right]$
6. [I liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda y\left[\right.$ like $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{y})\right]$
7. [1p Adam like $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda y\left[\operatorname{like}{ }^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{y})\right](\mathrm{a})=\operatorname{like}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})$
8. $\left[\mathrm{C}, \lambda_{1}\right.$ Adam liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.$ like $\left.{ }^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})\right]$
9. $\left[\mathrm{CP1}\right.$ what $t_{1}$ Adam liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.\mathrm{e}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]\left(\lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.\right.$ like $\left.\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})\right]\right) \equiv$ $\lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ inanimate ${ }^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right) \wedge \lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ like $\left.\left.\left(x_{1}\right)(a)\right]\left(x_{1}\right)\right] \equiv \lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.{ }^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right)(a)\right]\right]$
10. $\left[\mathrm{CP}_{2} \delta\right.$ what Adam liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \sigma \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\text { inanimate }{ }^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})\right]\right]^{16}$

The semantic derivation of (30) can be divided into three main steps.

STEP 1: up 10 TP ${ }_{1}$ level. The predicate like denotes a two-place relation that takes two entities as its arguments ( 31.1 ). The human being denoted by $A d a m$ in subject position is

[^24]one entity. The other should come from the semantic contribution of the object. But the wh-trace in object position does not denote an entity in the same way that Adam does. The trace is represented as a free variable at logical form (31.2) and $\mathbb{P}_{1}$ (the $\mathbb{I P}$ of the DP-like standard FR) ends up being represented as an open formula (31.6). In other words, Adam liked $x_{1}$ can be interpreted only if a denotation is assigned to its free variable by an assignment function. When this happens, $\mathbb{I P}_{1}$ denotes a truth value with respect to that specific assignment function.

I am assuming that predicates like like can take expressions that denote both atomic and plural entities as their arguments. Therefore, the value of $\mathrm{x}_{1}$ ranges over atomic and plural entities.

In order to keep the explanation as simple and short as possible, I am ignoring some details that are not directly relevant for our discussion. In particular, I am assuming that the inflectional head I and the past morphology on the verb like are semantically inert $(31.1,6)$.

STEP 2: $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ level. For reasons that will be discussed later, I want $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ (the lowest CP layer of the DP-like standard FR in (30b)) to denote a set of entities, more precisely the set of inanimate entities that Adam liked. So we need to go from the denotation of $\mathrm{IP}_{1}$, i.e. a truth value under an assignment function, to a set of entities. First, I assume that the semantic contribution of the complementizer node C of a wh-clause is to $\lambda$-abstract over the free variable that is coindexed with the wh-word, so that $\mathrm{C}^{\prime}$ ends up denoting the set of entities that Adam liked. Second, I assume that the wh-word what applies to a set of entities to give back all and only the entities of that set that are inanimate. So $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ ends up
denoting the set of inanimate entities that Adam liked.
STEP 3: $\mathrm{CP}_{2}$ level. Finally, a semantic operation applies when the adjunct $\delta$ combines with $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ that changes the denotation from the set of entities that Adam liked $\left(\mathrm{CP}_{1}\right.$, type $<e, t>)$ to the maximal entity that Adam liked $\left(\mathrm{CP}_{2}\right.$, type $\left.<\mathrm{e}>\right)$. The $\sigma$-operator from Link (1983) applies to a set and returns its maximal entity. Now the DP-standard FR has the right type to combine with the matrix predicate eat, which selects for an entity-denoting expression in its object position (type <e>). You can eat only things, not sets.

### 2.4.2.2.1.2 A more general formulation and some related issues

I will now look at the compositional semantics of DP-like standard FRs introduce by who and what (and their equivalents across languages) in more general terms, state the crucial rules and assumptions, and discuss them together with some relevant ontological issues. (32) shows a general schema for the LF representation of DP-like standard FRs; (33) gives the main steps of the translation in logical form of a DP-like standard FR; (34) states the rule that triggers $\lambda$-abstraction. The discussion that follows below is once again divided into three main steps.

(33) Main components of the logical form of a $D P$-like standard $F R$

1. $\mathrm{t}_{1} \rightarrow \mathrm{X}_{1}$
2. $\mathrm{IP}_{1} \rightarrow \mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)$
3. $w h_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda x_{1}\left[ \pm\right.$ animate $\left.^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
4. $\delta \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \sigma \mathrm{X}[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]$
5. $\left[\mathrm{c}, \lambda_{1} \mathrm{IP}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1} \mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)$
6. $\left[\mathrm{CPI}_{1} \mathrm{wh}_{1} \mathrm{C}^{\prime}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[ \pm\right.$ animate $\left.{ }^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
7. $\left[\mathrm{CP} 2 \delta \mathrm{CP}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \sigma \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[ \pm\right.$ animate $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
(34) Rule to combine the wh-complementizer $\lambda$ with its IP sister
if $\mathbb{P}_{1} \rightarrow P\left(x_{1}\right)$
then $\left[c^{\prime} \lambda_{1} \mathrm{P}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
STEP 1: up to IP level. A DP-like standard FR always contains a DP gap in argument position by definition ( $\S 2.3$ ). I assume the gap is filled in with $t_{1}$, the trace of the wh-word whit that has been moved to Spec of $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ (32). I also assume that an indexed trace translates into an indexed free variable at logical form (33.1). Given this assumption, the IP of a DP-like standard FR will always denote an open formula (33.2).

An open formula is a formula with a free variable. A free variable is an unbound variable whose value needs an assignment function to be determined. An assignment function is introduced into the model precisely to assign a value to each free variable.

Personal pronouns are often treated as free variables when they are not bound. The pronoun it in Adam liked it can been seen as a free variable whose value is assigned by an assignment function that depends on the context. For instance, if we are talking about clafoutt, ${ }^{17}$ a French dessert, and we say Adam liked it, it is very likely that the assignment function that will be chosen to interpret the sentence in this case is the one that assigns it the entity clafouti as its denotation. Once an entity is assigned to $i t$, then the sentence Adam liked it can receive a truth value. We may wonder why the same mechanism does not apply to the IP of a DP-like standard FR. When we have an open formula like the logical form for $A$ dam liked $t_{1}$ in (31.(31), we cannot just interpret it by means of a (contextually) determined assignment function, so that Adam liked it and Adam liked th would end up being synonymous. This shows that free variables do not all behave the same semantically. Free variables of traces of wh-words cannot be assigned a value by means of an assignment function that is contextually determined. In other words, they need to be bound at a certain point of the semantic derivation.

I am assuming that the variable introduced by a wh-word can take either an atomic or a plural entity as its value. In other words, I am assuming that the lexical meaning of (some) predicates is such that their denotation can contain both atomic and plural entities. This is slightly different from Link's (1983) treatment of nominal predicates. As we saw in § 2.4.1.1, Link assumes a plural predicate, i.e. a predicate with plural entities in its denotation, to be the result of a pluralization operation that applies to the corresponding

[^25]singular predicate. For instance, the singular nominal predicate peanut denotes a set of atomic entities, while the corresponding plural nominal predicate peanuts denote a set of plural entities.

I am also assuming that non-nominal predicates contain both atomic and plural entities in their denotation, just to make the semantic derivations we are dealing with look simpler. A possible alternative, closer to Link's original idea, would be to assume that the meaning of wh-words is such that they trigger semantic pluralization of the predicate they apply to. More precisely, the denotation of wh-words in (33.3) would be replaced with (35).
(35) a. $\mathrm{wh}_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[ \pm\right.$ animate $\left.^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge^{*} \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
b. * is an operator that applies to a singular one-place predicate, i.e. a predicate that denotes a set of atomic entities, and turns it into a plural predicate that denotes a set containing both atomic and plural entities.

STEP 2. $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ level. I assume that the complementizer C of a wh-clause, which I called $\lambda_{1}$ in (32), is not semantically inert. It inherits the same index as the wh-word in its Spec position (by Spec-Head agreement?) and triggers $\lambda$-abstraction over a coindexed free variable at logical form (cf. the rule in (34)). In other words, the semantic composition of $\lambda_{1}$ with its IP sister turns a truth value whose value depends on an assignment function (this is the semantic value of the open formula in IP) into a set of entities whose extension is independent of any assignment function (33.4). This is how the free variable introduced in the logical representation of a DP-like standard FR is bound.

The second crucial assumption at the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ level concerns the semantic contributions of wh-words like who and what. I assume that they denote a function that applies to a set of
entities and returns a subset of it. The intuition behind this is simple. What a wh-word like what does semantically is to apply to a set of entities and return the subset of those entities that are inanimate. [ C , Adam liked $\hat{H}_{1}$ ] denotes the set of animate and inanimate entities that Adam liked, while [ cp what $\mathrm{I}_{1}$ Adam liked $t_{I}$ ] denotes only the set of inanimate things that Adam liked. Similarly, who applies to a set of entities and returns the subset that contains only animate things. The representation of who and what (and their cross-linguistic equivalents) at logical form (lf) is given in (36).
(36) If representation of who and what
a. $w h o_{1} \rightarrow \lambda \times \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[+\operatorname{animate}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
b. what $\left.t_{1} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{XX}_{\mathrm{x}_{1}[- \text { animate }}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$

STEP 3: $\mathbf{C P}_{2}$ level. By definition, DP-like standard FRs have the same distribution as DP arguments. Therefore, they always occur where entity-denoting expressions (type $\left\langle\mathrm{e}>\right.$ ) are selected. But the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-standard FR denotes a set of entities (type $<\mathrm{e}, \downarrow>$ ), rather than an entity. In order to deal with this type-mismatch, I assume that DP-standard FRs can shift from denoting a set of entities (type $<e, t>$ ) to denoting its maximal entity (type <e>). The way I implement this change in the syntactic representation is by means of a covert lexical element $\delta$ in CP adjunct position (33.4) that combines with $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ (33.6). $\S$ 2.4.2.2.3 is devoted to a discussion of $\delta$ and the conditions under which it can occur.

### 2.4.2.2.2DP-like free relatives introduced by where, when, and how

DP-like standard FRs introduced by where, when, and how and DP-like standard FRs introduced by who and what have the same distribution, but differ as far as the syntactic nature of their internal gap is concerned. The gapped position of DP-like standard FRs
introduced by who or what has the same properties as the position the whole FR occurs in, i.e. a DP argument. For instance, the DP-like standard FR introduced by what in Jie ate [FR what $t_{1}$ was on the table] occurs in an DP argument position (i.e. direct object) and its wh-trace $t_{1}$ occurs in a DP argument position (i.e. subject) as well. This similarity is crucial for our semantic derivation. Since the wh-trace is in a DP-argument position, it has type <e>. When $\lambda$-abstraction applies at the IP level, the result is a set of entities $\langle e, t\rangle$. Finally, type-shifting takes place and we end up with the whole FR having type <e>, the same as the wh-trace.

This is not the case for the gap in DP-like standard FRs introduced by where, when, and how. While the whole FR occurs in a DP argument position, its wh-trace occurs in an adjunct position or in a PP complement position. For instance, the DP-like standard FR introduced by where in I really liked $\left[\mathrm{FR}\right.$ where ${ }_{1}$ we had dinner $\mathrm{t}_{1}$ last week] occurs in a DP argument position (i.e. direct object), while its wh-trace occurs in a PP adjunct position (cf. We had dinner at Alto Palato last week). Whatever the semantic type of a PP argument or adjunct is, it cannot be the same as the type of a DP argument. I will say more about this issue in Chapter 3, where PP-like standard FRs will be discussed. For now, I will not go into the details of the semantic derivation of DP-like standard FRs introduced by where, when, and how. I will just notice that they exhibit maximality as well, i.e. they cannot refer to anything smaller than a maximal entity: where introduces DP-like standard FRs that denote maximal places, when maximal times/occasions/situations, and how maximal manners (cf. 2.4.1.2).

Once again, the way I am going to prove this is by showing that these DP-like standard

FRs pattern like definite DPs, which we are assuming always refer to a maximal entity, and unlike indefinite DPs, which can refer to something smaller. For instance, if we had dinner at three different restaurants last week and I particularly liked one of them, but not the others, then I can felicitously utter (37a) with the indefinite DP a place we had dinner last week.
(37) a. I really liked [Indefinte DP a place where we had dinner last week].
b. I really liked [Definite DP the place(s) where we had dinner last week].
c. I really liked [FR where we had dinner last week]. $(\neq a ;=b)$

On the other hand, if we replace the indefinite DP with the corresponding definite one, as in (37b), the resulting sentence would be infelicitous, if uttered in this situation. It would either incorrectly presuppose that we went to only one restaurant last week (singular definite DP) or wrongly assert that I really liked all three restaurants we went to (plural definite DP). What about the corresponding DP-like standard FR introduced by where in (37c)? It is as infelicitous as (37b). Similar examples are given for DP-like standard FRs introduced by when and how in (38) and (39), respectively.
(38) a. I really liked [Indefinite DP one time we had dinner at Pizzicotto].
b. I really liked [Definite pp the time(s) we had dinner at Pizzicotto].
c. I really liked [FR when we had dinner at Pizzicotto]. $(\neq a ;=b)$
(39) a.* I don't like [ [ndefinitc DP a way you talk to her].
b. 1 don't like [Definite DP the way(s) you talk to her].
c. I don't like [re how you talk to her]. $(\neq a ;=b)$

In conclusion, DP-like standard FRs introduced by where, when and how exhibit the same maximality effects as DP-like standard FRs introduced by who and what.

### 2.4.2.2.30n 0

Let us go back to the lexical meaning of $\delta$ in (33.4), repeated in (40) below. $\delta$ combines with a set-denoting XP to return the maximal individual of the set denoted by XP.
(40) $\delta \rightarrow \lambda X \sigma \times[X(x)]$

I assume that two conditions need to be satisfied in order for $\delta$ to be licensed: 1) the set that XP denotes must have a maximal entity, and 2) lexical blocking cannot apply. I will discuss both in turn.

Condition 1: maximal entity. In order for $\delta$ to combine with the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-like standard $\mathrm{FR}, \mathrm{CP}_{1}$ has to denote a set containing its maximal entity. But under which conditions do DP-like standard FRs denote a set containing its maximal entity? The answer I am going to suggest is rather simple: always, as long as the atomic entities of the set are sortally homogeneous. I tentatively suggest that the five phrasal wh-words who, what, where, when, and how (and their equivalents across languages) are related to five basic categories that entities are sorted into: animate things, inanimate things, places, times, and manners, respectively. So when phrasal wh-words are semantically combined with their set-denoting sister $C^{\prime}$, they make the set that $C^{\prime}$ denotes sortally homogenous. For instance, as we already saw, $\left[c\right.$, Adam liked $\left.t_{I}\right]$ denotes the set of entities (i.e., animate things, inanimate things, places, times, and manners) that Adam liked, while [СР what $t_{1}$ Adam liked $t_{i}$ ] denotes only the set of inanimate things that Adam liked. My claim is that while the set of inanimate things that Adam liked has a maximal entity, the set of entities of different sorts that Adam liked does not. The intuition behind this claim is that entities can be summed to form bigger entities only if they are of the same sort.

We can conceive the sum of two animate things like Jie and Adam as a new entity, the plural entity Jie $\oplus$ Adam. Here is some evidence in favor of this claim. First, we can attribute properties to Jie $\oplus$ Adam that do not pertain to either Jie or Adam. For instance, we can perfectly understand Jie and Adam met, while Jie met or Adam met do not make sense. Second, our lexicon has plenty of nouns that can be used to refer to Jie $\oplus$ Adam: the two guvs, the two UCLA linguists, etc. (I am assuming that nouns only denote sortally homogeneous sets). Now what happens if we consider an animate thing like Adam and a place like Berlin together? Although the pairing is not random at all, since Adam loves Berlin and he has been there many times, still there is no property that can be attributed to Adam and Berlin as a unit without being distributed over each of them. Also, there does not seem to be any noun that we can use to refer to both of them together, not even an extremely generic noun like thing. The two things I love the most are Adam and Berlin sounds at least awkward.

Condition 2: overt lexical blocking. The covert lexical element $\delta$ cannot occur with an XP if there is another lexical item in the lexicon that 1) is overt, 2) has the same denotation as $\delta$, and 3 ) can occur with XP. I call these three conditions together overt lexical blocking (cf. Chierchia (1998). Overt lexical blocking prevents $\delta$ from occurring indiscriminately with any set-denoting expressions in the language. For instance, the noun peanut denotes a set of entities (i.e. peanuts). Without overt lexical blocking, *Adam ate peanut would be predicted to be acceptable, since $\delta$ could combine with peanut and $\delta$ peanut would result in an entity-denoting expression. But the presence of the overt determiner the in the lexicon blocks the occurrence of $\delta$, because the semantic
contribution of the according to Link (1983) is exactly the same as $\delta$. On the other hand, $\delta$ can combine with the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-like standard FR because the determiner the cannot take a CP complement.

The acceptability of Adam ate peanuts is not a counter-examples (cf. Chierchia (1998) and Dayal (in progress) for a detailed discussion). Adam ate peanuts is not semantically equivalent to Adam ate the peanuts. Therefore, if any covert determiner at all is licensed with bare plurals like peanuts, it has different semantic property from $\delta$.

We have seen under which conditions $\delta$ can apply. But why do we need $\delta$ at all? And why does $\delta$ have the meaning of a definite determiner rather than the meaning of any other determiner? I will briefly touch on both questions.

Question 1: Why $\delta$ ? $\delta$ is needed to repair a type-mismatch. By definition, DP-like standard FRs have the same distribution as DP arguments. Therefore, they always occur where entity-denoting expressions (type <e>) are selected. But, according to the analysis I am proposing, the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-like standard FR denotes a set of entities (type $<\mathrm{e}, \mathrm{t}>$ ). The reason why $I$ am arguing that $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ denotes a set and not an entity will become clear in the next chapters. There I will show that there are at least three kinds of FRs that clearly do not denote an entity and whose semantic behavior can be more easily accounted for if their $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ denotes a set: existential FRs (Chapter 3), PP-like standard FRs (Chapter 3), and -ever FRs (Chapter 4).

Question 2: Why such a denotation for $\delta$ ? According to my proposal, $\delta$ has basically the same denotation as a definite determiner, the only difference being that it applies to a set that can contain both atomic and plural individuals, while the definite determiner can
apply only to one or the other, at least in English. One simple reason why I assigned $\delta$ that denotation is because it gives the correct semantics for DP-like standard FRs. But I think a more principled point can be made as well. The $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-like standard FR and of a FR in general always denotes a set of entities, while a DP-like standard FR always denotes the maximal entity of that set. Why does a DP-like standard FR not denote some entity, or every atomic entity, or most entities, etc. among the ones in the set denoted by its $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$. The hypothesis that I would like to suggest is that only overt lexical items can trigger quantification over a set. Going from a set to its maximal entity is the "best" strategy to solve the type-mismatch between a predicate and its DP-like standard FR argument without quantifying over the set denoted by the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-like standard FR . It is the best strategy because there is very little information that is lost going from a set to its maximal entity. By definition, all the members of a set are 'part of' its maximal entity. What is lost going from a set to its maximal entity is the bottom of the set. In other words, two non-identical sets can have the same maximal entity. For instance, if Andrea, Luca, Emanuele, and Sacha were all the people at the dinner and each of them kissed and was kissed by at least one of the other, then the maximal entity of the set of the people at the dinner (Andrea $\oplus$ Luca $\oplus$ Emanuele $\oplus$ Sacha) and the maximal entity of the people that kissed each other at the dinner (Andrea $\oplus$ Luca $\oplus$ Emanuele $\oplus$ Sacha) is the same, although the two sets are not identical. The set of people at the party has the atomic entities Andrea, Luca, Emanuele, and Sacha as its smallest members (i.e. its "bottom"), while the set of people who kissed each other at the dinner does not, since kissing each other does not distribute over atomic entities (e.g. Andrea cannot kiss each other).

The idea that maximalization applies as a default operation is largely inspired to Chierchia's (1998) and Dayal's (in progress) proposals of a ranking between type-shifing operations. Their 1 type-shifter is very close to our $\sigma$. Chierchia argues that the type-shifting operation nom is ranked higher than r and $\exists$, which are ranked at the same level. Dayal convincingly shows that nom and 1 should be ranked at the same level, both higher than $\exists$. I refer the reader to the two mentioned works for more details.

To sum up, the covert lexical item $\delta$ is required to repair the type-mismatch between the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP-like standard FR and the selectional requirements of the matrix predicate. The denotation of $\delta$ is basically the same as a definite determiner, because this is the only way to repair the type-mismatch without quantifying over the set denoted by $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$. The background assumption here is that quantification can only be triggered by overt lexical items, and not covert ones like $\delta$.

Two conditions have to be satisfied for $\delta$ to occur: 1) the XP that $\delta$ combines with has to denote a set containing its maximal entity, and 2) there is no overt lexical item with the same denotation as $\delta$ that can combine with XP (overt lexical blocking).
2.4.2.2.40n the semantic contribution of whewords: differences with Jacobson (1995)

As discussed earlier (§ 2.4.2.2.1.2: Step 2), I assume that who and what (and their cross-linguistic equivalents) denote a function that applies to a set of entities and returns a subset of it. I repeated their representations at logical form (lf) in (36).
(41) If representation of who and what according to my proposal
a. who $_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ tanimate $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
b. what $t_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.$ animate $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{X}_{1}\right)\right]$

The semantic contribution of wh-words represents a crucial difference between my proposal and Jacobson's (1995). She assumes that wh-words denote a function from a set to the singleton set containing the maximal entity of the original set. In (42), I gave the If representation of who and what according to Jacobson's proposal. (I slightly adapted the original formulation in her example (56) to make the comparison with my own proposal clearer.)
(42) if representation of who and what according to Jacobson (1995)
a. who $_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[+\right.$ animate $^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \forall \mathrm{y}\left[\left[+\right.\right.$ animate $\left.\left.\left.\left.{ }^{\rho}(\mathrm{y}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{y})\right] \rightarrow \mathrm{y} \leq \mathrm{x}_{1}\right]\right]\right]$
b. what $t_{1} \rightarrow \lambda \times \lambda x_{1}\left[-\right.$ animate $\left.\left.^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \forall \mathrm{y}\left[\left[-\mathrm{animate}^{\prime}(\mathrm{y}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{y})\right] \rightarrow \mathrm{y} \leq \mathrm{x}_{1}\right]\right]\right]$

The difference between (41) and (42) is just the component in bold in (42). It adds the condition that every other entity y that has the same relevant properties ( $\pm$ animate and X ) as $x_{1}$ will be "smaller" or "part-of" $x_{1}$. In other words, $x_{1}$ is required to be the maximal entity of the set of entities that have the relevant properties. So, the crucial difference between my proposal and Jacobson's is that she incorporates the maximality of DP-standard FRs (i.e. the fact that they refer to a maximal entity) into the lexical meaning of their wh-words. This move makes a clear prediction: maximality should be observed in any kind of wh-clause that makes use of those wh-words. This prediction is not bome out. In Chapter 3, I will discuss two counterexamples to Jacobson's proposal: existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs.

### 2.4.3. Conclusions

Following Jacobson (1995), we showed that DP-like standard FRs always denote maximal entities, as definite DPs do according to Link (1983). In doing so, we proved the generalization we started with in (14): DP-like standard FRs always denote a maximal entity, therefore they always denote an entity.

We then derived this result compositionally by means of the following assumptions: 1) DP-like standard FRs are CPs ; 2) their IP translates into an open formula with the trace of the wh-word introducing a free variable; 3) when their IP combines with the complementizer $C, \lambda$-abstraction applies and $C^{\prime}$ turns into a set-denoting expression; 4) the wh-word makes that set sortally homogeneous (all animate things or all inanimate things); 5) a covert element $\delta$ combines with the CP and changes the overall denotation from a set to the maximal entity of that set.

### 2.5. Against other proposals about the semantics of DP-like standard free relatives

### 2.5.1. DP-like standard FRs as both definites and universals

According to Cooper (1983), DP-like standard FRs ${ }^{18}$ are ambiguous between a universal interpretation and a definite interpretation. For instance, the two readings for the FR in (43a) could be paraphrased as in (43b) (universal reading) and (43c) (definite reading).

[^26](43) a. Jie ate [rr what Adam cooked].
b. = Iie ate [Universal Dp everything Adam cooked]. Universal Reading
c. $=$ Jie ate [Defimite Dp the thing Adam cooked]. Definite Reading

Cooper's (1983) analysis of DP-like standard FRs is part of a more general semantic analysis of all wh-clause types in English. He assumes that wh- words like who, what, which in wh-INTs, standard FRs and HRs are all semantically identical and denote the identity function (they may also impose some restrictions on their domain, like $\pm$ animate). All wh-clauses denote a function characterizing a set of entities. For instance, all the embedded wh- CPs in (44) denote the set of things that Adam cooked (cf. (44).
(44) a. Jie ate [Dp [cp whati Adam cooked $t_{i}$ ]].
b. Jie ate [ pp the food [cp which $h_{i}$ Adam cooked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{i}}\right]$ ].
c. Jie wonders $\left[\mathrm{wh-NT}\left[\mathrm{cp}\right.\right.$ what $\mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{i}}$ Adam cooked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{i}}\right]$.
(45) $\mathrm{CP} \rightarrow \lambda x\left[\operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$

The CP in DP-like standard FRs is then mapped into a DP at the syntactic level and into a DP-like meaning at the level of semantic interpretation. Since FRs can be either definites or universals, two semantic rules need to be assumed to interpret DP-like standard FRs (cf. (46).
(46) a. Universal Rule: $\quad \mathrm{DP}_{\mathrm{FR}} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X}\left[\forall \mathrm{x}\left(\mathrm{CP}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x}) \rightarrow \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})\right)^{19}\right.$
b. Definite Rule: $\quad \mathrm{DP}_{\mathrm{FR}} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X}\left[\mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{nX}\left[\mathrm{CP}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x})\right]\right)\right]$

As Jacobson (1995) points out, a main theoretical problem with this approach is that no principled reason is given why DP-like standard FRs should be interpreted with the

[^27]semantic rules in (46) above rather than others. What would prevent us from adding a third semantic rule like the one in (47) that would turn DP-like standard FRs into existentially quantified expressions? In other words, why can't we paraphrase (43a) also with Jie ate something Adam cooked?
(47) (Hypothetical) Existential Rule: $\mathrm{DP}_{\mathrm{FR}} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X}\left[\exists \mathrm{x}\left(\mathrm{CP}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})\right)\right]$

Cooper's (1983) proposal is also undermined by a serious empirical problem. His claim that DP-like standard FRs can behave like universals cannot be correct. Standard FRs show quantificational variability effects, while truly quantified expressions do not. For instance, (48a) contains both a FR and an adverb of quantification like for the most part. In a situation in which Adam cooked many things for Thanksgiving, (48a) means that Jie ate most of the things that Adam cooked for Thanksgiving. (48b) is identical to (48a) except that the $F R$ has been replaced with a $H R$ that is headed by a universally quantified expression like everything. The resulting sentence is uninterpretable. (49a-b) make a similar point for Italian by using a DP-like standard FR introduced by chi 'who' and the adverb of quantification raramente 'rarely'.
(48) a. Jie for the most part ate [what Adam cooked for Thanksgiving].
b. \# Jie for the most part ate [everything Adam cooked for Thanksgiving].
(49) a. [Chi è merdionale] raramente è alto e biondo. who is Southerner rarely is tall and blond 'Italians from the South are rarely tall and blond.'
b. \# [Ogni meridionale] raramente è alto e biondo. every Southerner rarely is tall and blond ('Every Italian is rarely tall and blond.')

### 25.2. DP-like standard FRs as indefinites

### 2.5.2.1 Berman

Developing a suggestion in Nishigauchi $(1986 ; 1990)$, Berman $(1991,1994)$ argues that wh-phrases behave like indefinites, according to the analysis of indefinites in Lewis (1975), Kamp (1981) and Heim (1982): they both introduce free variables in the logical representation. Berman's argument in favor of his hypothesis is that, according to him, indefinites and wh-phrases exhibit the same quantificational variability effects. The data he provides to support his argument are of the kind in (50). ${ }^{20}$
(50) a. [Indefinte DP A quadratic equation] usually has two different solutions.
$\mathrm{a}^{\text {'. [ [Quantified DP }}$ Most quadratic equations] have two different solutions each.
b. [rR What Sue paints] is often beautiful.
b'. [Quantifed DP Many things Sue paints (i.e. many paintings by Sue)] are beautiful.

The sentence in (50a) is truth-conditionally equivalent to the sentence in ( $50 \mathrm{a}^{\circ}$ ), in which the underlined indefinite determiner $a$ and adverb of quantification usually in (50a) have been replaced with the underlined quantifier most. Similarly, the sentence in (50b) is truth-conditionally equivalent to the sentence in (50b'), in which the underlined wh-phrase what and adverb of quantification often in (50a) have been replaced with the underlined quantified expression many things. I will discuss quantificational variability effects in FRs in detail in Chapter 5. Here I will just give the gist of my arguments against an approach à la Berman.

First of all, indefinites and DP-like standard FRs do not pattern alike as far as adverbs

[^28]of quantity (e.g. for the most part) are concerned; DP-like standard FRs pattern like definites.
(51) a. [FR What Sue buys] is for the most part expensive.
b. \#[Indefinite DP Something Sue buys $]$ is for the most part expensive.
c. [Definite DP The things Sue buys] are for the mose part expensive.

Second, indefinites and DP-like standard FRs do not pattern alike in episodic contexts. (52a) and (52b) are not truth-conditionally equivalent. Once again, DP-like standard FRs pattern like definites (cf. (52a) and (52c)).
(52) a. [rR What Sue bought last week] was really expensive.
b. [udefinite $D P$ Something Sue bought last week] was really expensive.
c. [Definite DP The things Sue bought last week] were really expensive.

### 2.5.2.2 Wiltschko

Wiltschko (1998) claims that wh-words in English FRs are indefinites and that FRs themselves semantically behave like indefinites. As such, they can receive the two readings that indefinites usually receive: a generic reading and a specific reading. According to this view, Cooper's (1983) "universal" reading of FRs is actually a generic reading, while the "definite" reading is just a specific reading.

Wiltschko (1998) supports her claim with many distributional and interpretative arguments. Unfortunately, she does not distinguish between standard FRs and -ever FRs, even though most of her arguments work only for eever FRs. Moreover, she does not give an explicit semantics, and thus it is not clear what she really means by "generic" and "specific" readings. If they are supposed to mean what they usually mean for indefinites, it seems unlikely that this can be the correct account for standard FRs. For instance, I think the intuition is quite clear that the definite DP in (53c) is a paraphrase of the
standard FR in (53a), while the indefinite DP in (53b) is not. In fact, (53b) can be true when (53a) and (53c) are not. Imagine the situation in which Adam cooked ten different things for Thanksgiving and Jie ate only one of them. In this situation, it would be appropriate to utter (53b) with the singular indefinite, while (53a) and (53c) would be clearly false.
(53) a. Jie ate [FR what Adam cooked for Thanksgiving].
b. I ate [dp a certain thing / things Adam cooked for Thanksgiving].
c. I ate [pp the thing(s) Adam cooked for Thanksgiving].

Gutiérrez-Rexach (1999) suggests a similar analysis for Spanish FRs, but only for standard FRs.

### 2.6. On the syntactic nature of standard free relatives

Standard FRs exhibit a puzzling mix of syntactic properties: 1) they look like clauses, but 2) have the distribution of DPs or PPs (at least most of the time) and 3) satisfy peculiar "matching" requirements. We already discussed the first two properties in Chapter 1. There we saw that standard FRs can be identical to wh-INTs and can always be replaced with DPs or PPs. As for "matching" requirements, it would be enough for our purposes to say that the wh-phrase of a standard FR has to satisfy/match some morpho-syntactic requirements of the matrix clause. And this is true crosslinguistically. For instance, (54a) is unacceptable because the standard FR is in the complement position of the matrix predicate cooked and category matching would require the syntactic category of the wh-phrase to match the syntactic category of the complement that brought selects for. But with what is a PP, while brought selects for a DP. If we avoid the mismatch by
stranding the preposition, the result is fully acceptable (54b). Notice that this contrast cannot be due to the fact that preposition pied-piping is disfavored over preposition stranding in English. (54c), with an embedded wh-INT, is judged much more acceptable than (54a), with an identical embedded FR, though the prepositions have been pied-piped in both embedded clauses.
(54) a. *I finally cooked [ ${ }_{\mathrm{FR}}$ [pp with what] I can make that cake].
b. I finally cooked [ ${ }_{\mathrm{FR}}$ [ DP what] I can make that cake with]. c. ? I wonder [wh-NT [pp with what] I can make that cake].

More generally, categorial matching effects with standard FRs are found in languages that never allow preposition stranding.

Besides categorial matching effects, FRs sometimes exhibit "case matching", in languages whose wh-words are inflected for case. In these languages, the wh-word in a standard FR has to satisfy/match the case requirements of both the FR and its matrix clause. I refer to van Riemsdijk (2000: §4) for a detailed discussion of "matching" in FRs.

The many proposals that have been suggested to deal with the puzzling syntactic nature of standard FRs can be divided into two groups: the $\mathbb{F R}$-as- $\mathbb{H R}$ proposals and the FR-as-wh-INT proposals. The FR-as-HR proposals argue that FRs are DPs or PPs embedding a CP , as shown in (55); in other words, FRs end up looking syntactically very similar to HRs.
a.

or
b.


On the other hand, the accounts I have grouped under the label FR-as-wh-INT all propose that FRs are just CPs, i.e. they are syntactically (almost) identical to wh-INTs, as shown in (56).
(56) FR-as-wh-INT proposals


The FR-as-HR proposals can easily account for the distributional facts: standard FRs have the same distribution as DPs or PPs because, like HRs, they are complex DPs or PPs. But then it becomes difficult to explain why FRs look like CPs. What all these proposals end up doing is either postulating an empty (pronominal) HEAD (cf. (55b)) ${ }^{21}$ or assuming that the wh-phrase is (generated or moved) outside the FR itself and acts like the HEAD of a HR (cf. (55a) $)^{22}$.

On the other hand, the FR-as-wh-INT proposals can easily account for the clausal "look" of FRs, but have a hard time giving a syntactic explanation of their distribution. Ad hoc nominal or preposition-like properties have to be postulated about the $C$ head and

[^29]the CP projection of FRs. ${ }^{23}$
Finally, categorial and case matching effects are a serious problem for both approaches. All the proposals I am aware of can deal with them only by means of ad-hoc assumptions or radical changes in the theory.

### 2.7. Conclusions

Before concluding, I will briefly highlight the main points of this chapter. I started by defining standard FRs and suggesting a distinction between DP-like standard FRs and PP-like standard FRs. Following Jacobson (1995), I showed that a DP-like standard FR always denotes a maximal entity, as a definite DP does according to Link (1983). The way I derived this result compositionally crucially differs from Jacobson's.

According to Jacobson, a wh-word like what denotes a function that applies to a set of entities and returns the singleton containing the maximal entity of the original set. This is the basic denotation of the CP of FRs. Then, a type-shifting operation applies (iota) to turn the set into its only entity. In other words, Jacobson encodes maximality into the lexical meaning of wh-words and, therefore, predicts that every construction that makes use of those wh-words should exhibit maximality.

On the other hand, I assumed that a wh-word like who or what denotes a function that applies to a set of entities and returns a sortally homogeneous subset (all animate things or all inanimate things). Then, a covert element $\delta$ combines with the CP and changes its denotation from a set to the maximal entity of that set. In the next chapters, I will show

[^30]that, unlike Jacobson's, my approach to the meaning of wh-words can be used to account for the semantic behavior of non-maximal FRs like existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs. Although $\delta$ is not completely meaning-preserving (unlike Jacobson's iota), I suggested that going from a set to its maximal entity is the "best" strategy to solve the type-mismatch between a predicate and its DP-like standard FR argument without quantifying over the set denoted by the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of a DP -like standard FR . It is the best strategy because there is very little information that is lost going from a set to its maximal entity. By definition, all the members of a set are 'part of' its maximal entity, if the set contains it.

Then, I discussed some of the problems with those approaches that do not treat DP-like standard FRs as denoting a maximal entity. Finally, I briefly durveyed the main proposals about the syntactic structure of DP-like standard FRs to conclude that this is still an open issue since no proposal is really satisfactory. Therefore, my assumption that all FRs are just CPs is as problematic as the other proposals, but at least reduces the number of ad-hoc assumptions.

## CHAPTER 3

# Non-maximal Free Relatives: <br> Existential Free Relatives and PP-like Standard Free Relatives 

### 3.1. Introduction

In this chapter, I discuss two kinds of FRs that were both briefly introduced in Chapter 2: existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs. The property that these FRs have in common that makes them extremely important for the present work is that neither of them has to be interpreted as maximal, i.e. neither of them has to refer to a maximal entity. More precisely, existential FRs never refer to a maximal entity, while PP-like standard FRs may not. This is different from what we concluded about DP-like standard FRs in Chapter 2. On the other hand DP-like standard FRs, existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs can all be introduced by the same wh-words.

These similarities and differences are the reason why I am discussing existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs in the present work. They both support and strengthen the conclusions about the semantic contribution of wh-words that we reached in Chapter 2. Wh-words do not lexically encode maximality, otherwise they could not occur in non-maximal constructions like existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs. On the other hand, as we have already discussed in Chapter 2, wh-words cannot lexically encode any existential force, otherwise we would not be able to account for maximality when it shows up in standard FRs. By looking at both DP-like standard FRs on the one hand and existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs on the other, we can conclude that the lexical
meaning of wh-words must be free of any maximality or quantificational force.
The chapter is structured in two main parts. In the first part, I deal with existential FRs (§3.2). I start with a definition (§3.2.1) and by briefly mentioning what little has been said on existential FRs in the literature (§ 3.2.2). Then I show why they are FRs according to the definition in Chapter 1 and give some examples across languages ( $\$ \S 3.2 .3-3.2 .4$ ). I discuss the properties of the small class of predicates that introduce existential FRs ( $\S 3.2 .5$ ) and the similarities between the scopal behavior of existential FRs and non-specific indefinite $\operatorname{DPs}(\S 3.2 .6)$. I then propose a semantic analysis of existential FRs that makes them very similar to standard FRs, the only crucial difference being the different properties of the position in which they occur inside the matrix clause. This analysis will account for three main properties of existential FRs: 1) the fact that they are a kind of FR, 2) the fact that they can occur only as complements of a limited number of predicates, and 3 ) the fact that they can always be replaced and paraphrased with non-specific indefinite DPs (§ 3.2.7). Finally, I briefly discuss the other proposals on the semantics of existential FRs that I am aware of (§ 3.2.8).

The second part is about PP-like standard FRs, in particular the ones that do not show maximality (§3.3). This part is much shorter since I do not yet have a worked-out compositional semantic analysis for PP-like standard FRs. Nevertheless, the data clearly show that PP-like standard FRs can be interpreted as non-maximal (§3.3.3). This is already enough to make PP-like standard FRs a convincing argument against an approach to maximality that encodes it in the lexical meaning of wh-words.

### 3.2. Existential FRs

### 3.2.1. A definition

What I labeled existential FRs are FRs that occur in the complement position of certain existential predicates and can be replaced and paraphrased with indefinite DPs. Although not found in English, existential FRs are attested in many other languages. Examples from Hebrew are given in (1). ${ }^{1}$
(1) a. le-mazali yesh li [rr im mi le-daber] kshe-ani acuva. Modern Hebrew to-luck-my have to-me with who to-talk when-I sad.F
'Fortunately, I have somebody to talk to when I am sad.'
b. al tid'ag -- yesh lanu [fr ma li-kro].
don't worry have to-us what to-read
'Don't worry! We have something to read.'
c. eyn li [fR eyfo le-histater] be-mikre xerum. ${ }^{2}$
not-have to-me where to-hide in-case emergency 'I don't have a place where I can hide myself in case of danger.'
d. mafti'a she-yesh la [fr matay li-kro sfarim].
surprising that-have to-her when to-read books
'I am surprised she has (some) time to read.'
e. ani micta'er: eyn li [fr eyx la-asot et ze]. ${ }^{3}$

1 apologize not-have to-me how to-do ACC it
'I am sorry, but I don't have a way to do it.'
f.* eyn li [fr lama la-asot et ze].
not-have to-me why to-do ACC it
('I don't have any reason to do it.')
Each example in (1) has a different phrasal wh-word. lama 'why' is the only wh-word that cannot occur in existential FRs (1f). This is the same pattern we observed in standard

[^31]FRs in Hebrew (cf. Chapter 1, §??). The similarities and differences between existential FRs and standard FRs are not peculiar to Hebrew. It is true across languages that existential FRs are introduced by the same wh-words as standard FRs, but, unlike standard FRs, they can occur only in the complement position of a very restricted class of predicates and cannot be paraphrased with definite DPs, i.e. they never refer to a maximal entity.

### 3.2.2. Existential free relatives in the literature

Existential FRs have not received as much attention in the literature as standard FRs. Existential FRs in French, Spanish and Catalan are briefly mentioned in Hirschbühler (1978: 168-170), Hirschbühler and Rivero (1981), and Suñer (1983-1984: 361-363), where they are called 'infinitival free relatives'. Plann (1980: Ch. 3, 4) has a detailed syntactic discussion of existential FRs introduced by quien 'who' and que 'what' in Spanish. Ramos-Santacruz (1994) argues that existential FRs in Spanish, which he calls 'nonspecific free relatives', behave like non-specific indefinites and therefore must be headed by 'a yet unidentified empty category'. Pesetsky (1982: 149-157) and Rappaport (1986) discuss existential FRs in Russian. Rudin (1986) deals with existential FRs in Bulgarian, which she calls INDEF and assumes not to be FRs. Grosu (1994: 137-142) briefly discusses the syntactic properties of existential FRs, which he calls 'irrealis free relatives', in Spanish, Romanian and Modern Hebrew. Grosu and Landman (1998: 155-158), Izvorski (1998), Pancheva Izvorski (2000: Ch.2) and Grosu (to appear) are the only studies I am aware of that deal with the semantic properties of existential FRs. I will discuss each of them later. In particular, Grosu (to appear) is the most comprehensive
piece of work on existential FRs so far. It contains an extensive discussion of the cross-linguistic distribution and syntactic/semantic properties of existential FRs, which are called 'modal existential wh-constructions', with plenty of data from many languages. Some of the previous literature is summarized and a semantic analysis, which I will discuss later, is suggested for existential FRs. I will often refer back to this paper and I recommend it to the interested reader.

### 3.2.3. Existential free relatives are free relatives

According to the definition in Chapter 1, existential FRs are free relatives: 1) they are introduced by a wh-word or wh-phrase, 2) they are clauses with a gap in argument or adjunct position, and 3) they can always be replaced with truth-conditionally equivalent DPs. For instance, the bracketed string in (2a) is a FR because it has the wh-phrase con chi 'with who' in initial position, it is a clause with a PP gap, ${ }^{4}$ and it can be replaced and paraphrased with a DP (2b).
(2) a. Ho [ FR con chi parlare] quando sono triste. Italian have. Is with who speak.INF when am sad 'I have somebody to talk to when I am sad.'
b. Ho [Indefinite DP qualcuno con cui parlare] quando sono triste. have.1s somebody with RP speak.INF when am sad 'I have somebody to talk to when I am sad.'

### 3.2.4. Existential free relatives cross-linguistically

Existential FRs are not found in English or in the other Germanic languages ((3)-(5)), except for Yiddish ((6), (7)) and New York English (8), but they are widely attested in

[^32]Romance (at least, Italian, Spanish, Catalan, Portuguese, French, Romanian ((9)-(13)), Slavic (at least, Russian, Polish, Bulgarian, Serbo-Croatian, and Macedonian ((14)-(18)), Modern Greek (19), Albanian (20), Finno-Ugric (at least, Hungarian (21), Estonian (22), and Finnish (23), Modern Hebrew (1), and Moroccan Arabic (24). Examples are given in brackets below.
(3) Standard Canadian/American English (Carson Schütze p.c., Harold Torrence p.c.)
a. *I have $[$ who( m ) to talk to] when I am sad.
b. "I don't have [what to eat].
(4) German (Daniel Büring p.c.)

* Ich habe [mit wem ich sprechen kann], wenn ich traurig bin.

I have with who.DAT I speak can, when I sad am
(5) Dutch (Hilda Koopman p.c.)

* Ik heb [met wie te praten] als ik me triest voel.

I have with who to talk if I me sad feel
(6) Yiddish (Adam Albright p.c.)

Ikh hob nit [mit vemen ikh ken reden], az ikh bin troyerik.
I have not with who.DATI can speak, when I am sad
'I don't have anybody I can talk to when I am sad.'
(7) Yiddish (Koysef n.d.) ${ }^{5}$
[...] nisht vayil es iz nisht geven [mit vemen tsuredn]. not because it has not been with who.Dat to speak
'[...] not because there wasn't anyone one could talk to.'
(8) New York English (Nina Hyams p.c.)

I don't have [what to eat].
'I don't have anything I can eat.'

[^33](9) European and Mexican Spanish (Maria Arche p.c.; Heriberto Avelino p.c.)

Tengo [con quién hablar] cuando estoy triste. have. 1 S with whom speak.INF when am sad
'I have somebody I can talk to when I am sad.'
(10) Catalan (Hirschbühler and Rivero 1981:119; Amalia Llombart p.c.)

La pobra no tenia [amb qui parlar].
the.FEM poor.FEM not had.3S with whom speak.INF
'The poor one didn't have anybody she could talk to.'
(11) European and Brazilian Portuguese (Móia 1992: 94; Jazon Santos p.c.)

O Paulo não tem [a quem pedir ajuda].
the $P$. not has to whom ask-for.INF help
'Paulo doesn't have anybody he can ask for help.'
(12) French (Hirschbühler 1978: 168; Dominique Sportiche p.c.)

J'ai [de quoi écrire].
I-have of what write.INF
'I have something I can write with.'
(13) Romanian (Grosu 1994: 138)

Maria are [cu cine vota].
Maria has with whom vote.INF
'Maria has somebody she can vote for.'
(14) Russian (Pancheva Izvorski 2000: 26; Ora Matushansky p.c.)

Est' [s kem pogovorit'].
is with whom talk.INF
'There is somebody with whom one could talk.'
(15) Polish (Grosu, to appear: ex. 7)
(Nie) mam [co robić].
not have. 1s what do.INF
${ }^{6}$ There \{is something, isn't anything \} I can do.'
(16) Bulgarian (Rudin 1986: 190)

Toj ima [s kogo da govori].
he has with whom SUBJ talk. 3 s
'He has somebody he can talk to.'
(17) Serbo-Croatian (Alexandra Perovic p.c.; Jelena Krivokapic p.c.)

Nemam [ga kome dati].
not-have. 1 S it whom.DAT give.INF
'I don't have anybody I can give it to.'
(18) Macedonian (Slavica Kochovska p.c.)

Za sreka, imam [so kogo da zboruvam] koga sumtazhen.
for luck have. Is with whom SUBJ talk. Is when am sad
'Fortunately, I have somebody I can talk to when I am sad."
(19) Modern Greek (Maria Baltazani p.c.)

Exo [me pion na miliso]otan ime lipimenos.
have. 1s with who.ACC SUBI talk. IS when am sad
'I have somebody I can talk to when I am sad.'
(20) Albanian (Grosu, to appear: 11a)

Nuk ka [kushtë na dërgojë mall]. not have.IMPERSONAL who SUBJ us send.1P merchandise 'There is nobody who can send us the merchandise.'
(21) Hungarian (Anikó Lipták p.c.; Anna Szabolcsi p.c.)

Van [kivel beszélni].
is who.INS talk.INF
'There is someone with whom one could talk.'
(22) Estonian (Lumme Erilt p.c.)

Mul on [kelle-ga rääkida], kui ma kurb olen.
I.ALL have who-COM talk.INF when I.NOM sad am
'I have somebody I can talk to when I am sad.'

[^34](23) Finnish (Elsi Kaiser p.c.)

Minulla on [kenelle puhua] kun olen surullinen.
I.ADE is who.ALL speak.INF when am sad.
'I have somebody I can talk to when I am sad.'
(24) Moroccan Arabic (Taoufik Afkinich p.c.; Boujemaa Boudali p.c.) mon-zhar fond-I [mia mon n-odw-1] moll kankun hazm from-luck have. 1 s with whom 1 -talk-1s when was be. 1 s sad 'Fortunately, I have somebody I can talk to when I am sad.'

In conclusion, the distribution of existential FRs across languages by and large resembles the distribution of standard FRs with the exception of a few Germanic languages. Why existential FRs are not attested in all Germanic languages that have standard FRs is not clear to me. It is interesting that Yiddish, one of the two Germanic languages that allow existential FRs, has historically been in contact with Slavic languages that allow existential FRs. The variety of New York English that allows existential FRs is likely to have been influenced by Yiddish, given that its speakers were and some still are Yiddish speakers as well (Nina Hyams p.c.).

### 3.2.5. Predicates that introduce existential free relatives

Existential FRs can occur only in the complement position of two small classes of predicates: (i) predicates that assert the existence of their complement (the equivalents of existential be and existential have), and (ii) predicates that assert their complement's 'coming into being, view, or availability, or causation of one of these (for example, arrive, be born, choose, look for, find, send, obtain, and wangle)' (Grosu, to appear). All languages that have existential FRs license them as complements of predicates of type (i); some also license them with a subset of predicates of type (ii) (the size of the subset
varies from language to language). All the examples so far were with predicates of type (i). Below some examples are given with predicates of type (ii). The reader is referred to Grosu (to appear) for further data and discussion.
(25) Romanian (Grosu, to appear: ex. 1.b)
îți voi trimite [ cu ce să speli rufele]. you.DAT will.1s send.INF with what SUBI wash. 2 s clothes-the 'I will send you something with which to wash the clothes.'
(26) Albanian (Grosu, to appear : ex. 11.b)

Zgdjodhi [kushta zëvendësojë].
chose.3s who SUBJ-her replace.3P
'She chose someone to take her place.'
(27) Hungarian (Grosu, to appear: ex. 5.b)

Talátál [mit enni]?
found. 2 s what.ACC eat.INF
'Did you find something to eat?'

### 3.2.6. Existential free relatives and non-specific indefinite DPs

In all the examples above, every existential has been translated in English with an indefinite DP (somebody/anybody, something/anything). This is not accidental. Unlike standard FRs, existential FRs can never be replaced and paraphrased with definite DPs, but only with non-specific indefinite DPs. (28a) shows an example of an existential FR in Italian; in (28b), the existential FR has been replaced with an indefinite DP and the result is acceptable, while, in (28c), the existential FR has been replaced with a definite DP and the sentence becomes unacceptable.
(28) a. Non preoccuparti: ogni studente ha [fR con chi pariare] in caso di bisogno. not worry.IMP each has with who speak.INF in case of need 'Don't worry too much: each of them has somebody to talk to if they need to.'
b. Non preoccuparti: ognuno di loro ha [dp qualcuno con cui parlare] in caso di bisogno. not worry.IMP each of them has somebody with RP speak.INF in case of need 'Don't worry too much: each of them has somebody to talk to if they need to.'
c.*Non preoccuparti: ognuno di loro ha [dp la persona con cui parlare] in caso di bisogno. not worry.IMP each of them has the person with RP speak. INF in case of need ('Don't worry too much: each of them has the person to talk to if they need to.')

Indefinite DPs that replace existential FRs can never be interpreted specifically. For instance, (28b) camnot be interpreted as asserting that there is just one specific person such that each of them can go and talk to that person, but only that each of them has a potentially different person they can go and talk to. Similar effects can be observed if the matrix predicate is negated: the indefinite $D P$ that replaces the existential $F R$ cannot scope above negation. For instance, the existential FR in (29a) from Italian can be replaced and paraphrased with the indefinite DP in (29b). The sentence in (29b) can never mean that there exists a place where Carlo can hide but he does not have it available, or anything similar.
(29) a. Carlo non ha [rrdove nascondersi in caso di pericolo].

Italian
Carlo not has where hide.INF-CL.REFL in case of danger 'Carlo doesn't have a place where he can hide in case of danger.' $\neq \#$ 'There is a place where Carlo can hide in case of danger, but he doesn't have it'
b. Carlo non ha [dp un posto in cui nascondersi in caso di pericolo]. Carlo not has a place in REL hide.INF-CL.REFL in case of danger 'Carlo doesn't have a place where he can hide in case of danger.' $\neq$ \#'There is a place where Carlo can hide in case of danger, but he doesn't have it'

Another way to describe the pattern above is to say that predicates that introduce existential FRs never let their complement scope out. This is basically a generalization to
both existential-be-like and existential-have-like predicates of Milsark's (1974) observation that the complement position of the there is construction is a scope island.

### 3.2.7. A semantic amalysis for existential free relatives

In the previous sections, I showed that existential FRs are 1) a kind of $\operatorname{FR}(\S 3.2 .3), 2)$ can occur only as complements of a limited number of predicates ( $\$ 3.2 .5$ ), and 3 ) can always be replaced and paraphrased with non-specific indefinite DPs (§ 3.2.6). I will now give a semantic analysis of existential FRs that accounts for these facts without assuming anything more than what is already available from the analysis of standard FRs in Chapter 2.

The main idea that I would like to pursue is that there is no crucial difference between the semantic contribution of the CP of FRs: the only CP node of existential FRs denotes what the $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$ of DP-like standard FRs denotes : a set of entities. This is why existential FRs are replaceable and paraphrasable with indefinite DPs, which are commonly taken to denote or be able to denote sets of entities. ${ }^{7}$ As such, existential FRs can occur only with predicates that take set-denoting expressions as their complements. Intuitions are clear that predicates of type (i) in $\S 3.2 .5$ (i.e. the equivalents of existential be and have across languages) assert the existence of at least one member in the set denoted by their complement (in other words, they lexically encode existential quantification over their complement). For instance, $c$ 'è 'there's' in (30a) clearly asserts that there exists at least

[^35]one person who says no all the time, though it is likely that there is more than one. Similarly, existential ha 'has' in (30b) asserts that there is a person (maybe more than one) who takes care of Anna Maria's children.
(30) a. C'è [fr chi sà dire solo no]. Italian there's who can.3S say only no
'There $\{$ is somebody/are people\} who $\{$ says/say $\}$ no all the time.'
b. Anna Maria ha già [FR chi le cura i bambini].

Anna Maria has already who to-her.CL takes-care-of the children
'Anna Maria already has somebody who takes care of her children.'
The main difference between $c^{\prime} \dot{e}$ and $h a$ is that the latter also asserts that Anna Maria and the person who takes care of her children are somehow related, the nature of this relation being contextually determined. In other words, c'è and, more generally, existential-be-like predicates can be looked at as 1-place predicates that take a set-denoting expression as their complement and assert its non-emptiness, along the lines of Milsark (1974). (31) shows a way to state this formally. (Remember that x is a variable over entities, while X is a variable over sets of entities.)
(31) existential-be-like predicates: $\lambda \mathrm{X} \exists \mathrm{x}[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]$

On the other hand ha and the other existential-have-like predicates cross-linguistically can be seen as 2-place predicates that take a set-denoting expression as their complement and assert both that there is at least one member x in the set denoted by its complement and that x is in a contextually determined relation with the first argument y , as shown in (32). ( $R_{c}$ stands for a contextually determined 2-place relation.)
(32) existential-have-like predicates: $\lambda X \lambda y \exists x\left[X(x) \wedge \mathbb{R}_{C}(y, x)\right]$

Support for this analysis that brings existential-be-like predicates and existential-have-like predicates close together comes from languages like Hebrew in which existential-have-like predicates are formed by adding an oblique argument to existential-be-like predicates, as shown in (33). ${ }^{8}$
(33) a. yesh mishehu she-meacben et dafna kol ha-zman there-is someone that-annoys ACC Daphna all the-time 'There is someone who bothers Daphna all the time.'
b. le-dafna yesh mishehu she-meacben ota kol ha-zman to-daphna there-is someone that-annoys ACC-her all the-time 'Daphna has someone who bothers her all the time.'

It is less clear to me what characterizes the predicates of type (ii) in $\S 3.2 .5$. Grosu's description and examples are very heterogeneous: predicates of 'coming into being, view, or availability, or causation of one of these (for example, arrive, be born, choose, look for, find, send, obtain, and wangle)'. Also, there is a lot of cross-linguistic variation about them and there are languages that do not allow existential FRs to occur with predicates of type (ii) at all, Italian being one of them. Further research is needed. For the time being, I will concentrate only on predicates of type (i), which can introduce existential FRs in all languages that have them and whose semantic contribution is more transparent.

If we assume the logical representation for existential-be-like predicates and existential-have-like predicates in (31) and (32) above, we can easily account for the fact that existential FRs behave like non-specific indefinite DPs, i.e. they cannot take scope above the matrix subject or above negation. This is due to the fact that existential FRs do

[^36]not have their own quantificational force, but they acquire it by combining with the matrix predicate. The existential quantifier is part of the logical representation of the lexical meaning of the matrix predicate. As such, its scope will be anything in the domain of the matrix predicate, but nothing outside that.

I will now show the semantic derivation of a couple of examples of existential FRs. I assume that existential FRs have the same syntactic structure as standard FRs: they are bare CPs. Also, I assume that the wh-words in existential FRs are the same as the wh-words in standard FRs; therefore, their semantic contribution will be the same as in Chapter 2.

Let us start with an existential FR introduced by an existential-be-like predicate. The example in (34) from Italian shows an existential FR introduced by chi 'who'. Comments follow.
(34)a. C'è [FRchi sà dire solo no]. there's who can. 3 s say only no 'There $\{$ is somebody/are people\} who \{says/say\} no all the time.'
$\overbrace{C^{\prime} \dot{e} C P}^{\mathrm{IP}_{2}}$

(35) 1. I' $\rightarrow \lambda y[$ sà-dire-solo-no' $(\mathrm{y})$ ] $L E X X^{9}$
2. $\mathrm{t}_{1} \rightarrow \mathrm{X}_{1}$ LEX
3. $I P_{1} \rightarrow \lambda y[$ sà-dire-solo-no' $(\mathrm{y})]\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)=$ sà-dire-solo-no $\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \quad \mathrm{FA}$
4. $C^{\prime} \rightarrow \lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ sà-dire-solo-no $\left.\left(x_{1}\right)\right]$ $\lambda$-abstr
5. chi $i_{1} \rightarrow \lambda X \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[+\right.$ animate $\left.^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right] \quad$ LEX
6. $\mathrm{CP} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[+\operatorname{animate}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]\left(\lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.\right.$ sà-dire-solo-no' $\left.\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]\right) \quad F A$
$=\lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.$ +animate $\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge$ sà-dire-solo-no $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
7. $C^{\prime} \grave{e} \rightarrow \lambda X \exists \mathrm{X}[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]$ LEX
8. $\mathrm{IP}_{2} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \mathrm{\exists} \mathrm{x}[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]\left(\lambda y\left[+\right.\right.$ animate $^{\prime}(\mathrm{y}) \wedge$ sà-dire-solo-no $\left.\left.{ }^{\prime}(\mathrm{y})\right]\right)=\quad \mathrm{FA}$ $=\exists x\left[+\operatorname{animate}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x}) \wedge\right.$ sà-dire-solo-no' $\left.(\mathrm{x})\right]$

Comments. Notice that the logical representation for chi 'who' (35.5) is identical to the one for who in standard FRs that was given in Chapter 2. The only crucial difference between the derivation below and the one in Chapter 2 is the absence of the $\delta$ rule, since there is no type-mismatch between the existential FR and the complement selected by the matrix predicate.

Let us now look at an example of an existential $F R$ introduced by an

[^37]existential-have-like predicate. The example in (36) from Italian shows an existential FR introduced by con chi 'with who'. Comments follow.
(36) a. Flavio ha [fr con chi parlare]. Italian

Flavio has with who speak.INF
'Flavio has somebody he can talk to.'

```
    b. IP
    \overbracelavi\mp@subsup{O}{2}{\prime}
    CM CP
    \widehat { \ D P } \widehat { C }
    eenchi
        DP \(\mathrm{PRO}_{2}\)
                M
                        \P
                    \mathrm{ parlare PP}
                P DP
                con $1
(37) 1. }\mp@subsup{\textrm{t}}{1}{}->\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{
2. con }->\lambday\lambdax[\mp@subsup{\operatorname{con}}{}{\prime}(\textrm{x},\textrm{y})]\mathrm{ LEX
3. PP }->\lambday\lambdax[\mp@subsup{\operatorname{con}}{}{\prime}(x,y)](\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})=\lambdax[\mp@subsup{\operatorname{con}}{}{\prime}(x,\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})] F
4. parlare }->\lambda\times[\mathrm{ parlare'(x)] LEX
5. }\mp@subsup{\textrm{PRO}}{2}{}->\mathrm{ flavio' LEX
6. M}->\lambda\textrm{X}\lambda\textrm{yM}[\textrm{X}(\textrm{y})]\quad\mathrm{ LEX
7. VP}->\lambdax[parlare-con'(x,\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})] LEX
8. I',}\mp@subsup{}{}{\prime}->\lambdaX\lambdayM[X(y)](\lambdax[parlare-con'(x,\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})]) F
= \lambdayMparlare-con'(y,\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})
9. IP }\mp@subsup{P}{1}{}->\lambday\mathrm{ Mparlare-con'(y, (x)](flavio') FA
= Mparlare-con'(flavio',}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{}
10.C'}->\lambda\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{}\mathrm{ M[parlare-con'(flavio',}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})]\quad\lambda\mathrm{ -abstr
11.[DP chit] ] \lambdaXX }\mp@subsup{x}{1}{}[+\mathrm{ animate'(}(\mp@subsup{\textrm{X}}{1}{})\wedgeX(\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})] LEX
12.[pp chin}]->\lambdaX\lambda\lambda\mp@subsup{x}{1}{}[+\mathrm{ animate'(}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})\wedge\textrm{X}(\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})]\quad\mathrm{ ??
13.CP }->\lambdaX\lambda\mp@subsup{x}{1}{}[+\mathrm{ animate'( }\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})\wedgeX(\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})](\lambda\mp@subsup{x}{1}{}M[\mathrm{ M[parlare-con'(flavio',}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})]) F
    = \lambda\mp@subsup{x}{1}{}[+\mathrm{ animate'( }\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})\wedge Mparlare-con'(flavio',}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})
14.ha->\lambdaX\lambday\existsx[X(x)^R疎(y,x)]
LEX
```



```
    = \lambday\existsx[+animate'( (x) ) M Mparlare-con'(flavio',}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{})\wedge\mp@subsup{R}{C}{\prime}(\textrm{y},\textrm{x})
16.IP }\mp@subsup{P}{2}{}->\lambday\existsx[+animate'(x)\wedgeMparlare-con'(flavio',\mp@subsup{x}{1}{})\wedge (RC(y,x)](flavio') F
    =\existsx[+animate'(x)^Mparlare-con'(flavio',}\mp@subsup{\textrm{x}}{1}{\prime})\wedge\mp@subsup{\textrm{R}}{C}{(flavio',}\textrm{x})
```

Comments. Since it is not crucial for our discussion, I ignored the fact that PRO is a
pronominal element that is obligatorily controlled by the DP Flavio in (36) and I just assigned it the same denotation as Flavio lexically.

The existential FR in (36) has a modal flavor that I translated by means of the modal can. It is a modality of possibility/availability. As pointed out by Pancheva Izvosrski (2000), (38) is ambiguous between a possibility/availability reading (38a) and a deontic reading (38b). The existential FR in (36) can only be interpreted as (38a).
(38) Flavio has somebody to talk to.
a. Flavio has somebody he can talk to. (possibility/availability)
b. Flavio has somebody he has to talk to. (deontic necessity)

More generally, it is crosslinguistically true that infinitival/subiunctive existential FRs are always interpreted as expressing some modality of possibility/availability. ${ }^{10} \operatorname{In}(36)$, I used the operator $M$ (37.6) just to signal the modality of the existential FR, without dealing with it, because it is not crucial for our discussion. The only reason why $\mathbf{M}$ is in I rather than anywhere else is because the modality of existential FRs seems to be triggered by the nature of the verbal inflection (infinitive/subjunctive $v s$. indicative).

Although the wh-word chi obligatorily pied-pipes its sister preposition con, I assumed that con reconstructs into its base-generated position at LF. If a copy theory of movement is assumed, the copy of the preposition that is interpreted is always the base-generated one. In this way, the variable we are left with is of the right semantic type in order for the existential FR to end up denoting a set of entities. It follows that the PP in Spec of CP has exactly the same denotation as its DP complement (37.11-12)

[^38]
### 3.2.7. 1 Conclusions

I have given an analysis of existential FRs that makes them syntactically and semantically very similar to standard FRs. Syntactically, they are both bare wh-CPs. Semantically, they have the same denotation up to the CP level: they both denote a set of entities. The main difference is due to the matrix clause. In particular, an existential FR always occurs in the complement position of a predicate selecting for a set-denoting expression. As such, no type mismatch arises and the set denoted by the existential FR is quantified over by the existential quantifier introduced as part of the lexical meaning of the matrix predicate. On the other hand, as we saw in Chapter 2, standard FRs always give rise to a type mismatch since they always occur in an argument position of a predicate selecting for an entity-denoting expression in that position. A type-shifting rule applies by default to fix the type mismatch.

### 3.2.8. Other proposals

### 3.2.8.1 Grosu and Landman (1998)

Although developed independently, the analysis of existential FRs I proposed in the previous section can also be seen as an implementation of a suggestion briefly sketched in Grosu and Landman (1998), where existential FRs are discussed mainly as an example of a wh-construction that lacks an external HEAD and therefore does not exhibit maximality. Here is their suggestion in their own words (they call existential FRs 'irrealis free relatives'):

We assume that irrealis free relatives are bare CPs and do not occur in $\mathrm{DP}^{2}$ positions. [...]

Landman (1997) assumes that the position that is open to definiteness effect [where irrealis free relatives mainly occur, I.C.] is a position whose interpretation is set denoting - meaning, an NP or a CP, but crucially not a DP [...]. Whereas indefinites in argument position are DPs with an empty determiner that trigger Existential Lift, in contexts of indefiniteness Existential Lift is not triggered as part of the NP meaning (which is just a set), but comes in as part of the construction. Landman (1997) contains an explicit proposal to this effect. If we follow this, we predict correctly that irrealis free relatives can occur in contexts of indefiniteness, and we predict correctly that irrealis free relatives always have an existential interpretation (which comes in not as part of their meaning, but as part of the construction they occur in). [Grosu and Landman, 1998: 158]

### 3.2.8.2 Izvorski (1998)

Izvorski (1998) claims that existential FRs are not FRs. She assumes that there are two different sets of wh-words, the ones that introduce FRs and the ones that introduce wh-INTs. The former encode maximality in their lexical meaning. Therefore, a wh-clause has to exhibit maximality to be a FR. Otherwise, it is a wh-INT. Since existential FRs do not exhibit maximality, then they are not FRs. Wh-INTs, including existential FRs, translate into an open formula with a free variable (or more than one). Although she does not give an explicit semantics, she suggests, following Milsark (1974), that the existential predicates that introduce existential FRs provide an existential quantifier that closes the open formula in the case of existential FRs.

### 3.2.9. Conclusions: Existential free relatives and wh-words

In this first part of the chapter, we saw that most languages with DP-like standard FRs also have existential FRs. Existential FRs are introduced by the same wh-words as DP-like standard FRs, but, unlike DP-like standard FRs, they can occur only in the complement position of a very restricted class of predicates and cannot be paraphrased with definite DPs, i.e. they never refer to a maximal entity.

Existential FRs support and strengthen the conclusions about the semantic contribution
of wh-words we reached looking at DP-like standard FRs in Chapter 2. Contra Jacobson (1995), wh-words do not lexically encode maximality, otherwise they could not occur in non-maximal constructions like existential FRs.

### 3.3. PP-like standard free relatives

### 3.3.1. Recalling the definition

According to the definition in Chapter 2, PP-like standard FRs are all the standard FRs that are not DP-like standard FRs, i.e. all the standard FRs that can be replaced and paraphrased with a DP or a PP in an adjunct position or with a PP in a complement position (i.e. an argument position that is different from the subject position). Only standard FRs introduced by where, when, and how can occur as PP-like standard FRs. Examples are repeated in (10).
(39) a. I went [Fr where you told me to], but I couldn't find anything.
$\mathrm{a}^{\mathrm{\prime}}$. I went $[\mathrm{pp}$ to the place where you told me to], but I couldn't find anything.
b. [FR When you say goodbye], I die a little.
b'. [pp Every time you say goodbye], I die a little.
b ". [pp On the occasions you say goodbye], I die a little.
c. I studied for the final [rR how you studied for it], but you did better.
$c$ '. I studied for the final [pp in the same way you studied for it], but you did better.

### 3.3.2. PP-like standard FRs do not denote entities

The semantic literature on FRs has basically ignored PP-like standard FRs. Even when they are mentioned as examples of FRs, no analysis of their semantic properties is given. In this section, I will first show that they do not denote entities, unlike DP-like standard FRs.

Let us start with a couple of assumptions. 1) The only semantic role that entities can play is, in Fregean terms, to saturate predicates, i.e. they can only be arguments of functions. Therefore, we expect to find entity-denoting expressions only in argument position. ${ }^{11}$ 2) All entities can be referred to by means of definite DPs. We saw that Link's (1983) theory of definite DPs that we are assuming guarantees that definite DPs always refer to entities. But can they refer to all possible entities? They certainly do, if the entities in our ontology are the ones we have dealt with so far (animate things, inanimate things, places, times/situations, manners/ways) plus propositions. This can be proved with an easy trick: the animate things, the inanimate things, the places, the times/situations, the manners/ways, the proposition that... (or the claim that..., the fact that..., etc.) are all definite DPs and refer to all the possible entities we have in our ontology.

Given the two assumptions above, we can conclude that PP-like standard FRs do not denote entities because 1) they do not occur in argument position and/or 2) they cannot be paraphrased with definite DPs. For instance, the PP-like standard FRs in (10b,c,d) are all in adjunct position, and this is true in most cases, given our definition of PP-like standard FRs. The only exception is with PP-like standard FRs introduced by where that occur as complements of motion verbs, as in (10a). But even in this case we are not dealing with an entity-denoting PP-like standard FR since [FR where you told me to go]

[^39]cannot be replaced by a definite $\mathrm{DP}{ }^{* I}$ went [Dp the place you told me to go], ${ }^{12}$ i.e. it cannot be replaced with something that clearly refers to an entity.

### 3.3.3. PP-like standard FRs that do not exhibit maximality

We just concluded that, unlike DP-like standard FRs, PP-like standard FRs do not denote entities. What do they denote then? In order to answer this question, a detailed semantics for PP complements and adjuncts in general is needed, but I am not aware of any (but cf. at least Kracht 2002 for a preliminary investigation of locative PPs). Despite this limitation, it is still possible to make an important point about the semantic properties of PP-like standard FRs.

As shown in Chapter 2, DP-like standard FRs always exhibit maximality, i.e. they always refer to a maximal entity. Crucially, this is not true for PP-like standard FRs. Since in the previous section we concluded that PP-like standard FRs do not denote entities at all, it may look rather trivial to claim that they do not denote maximal entities. But what I mean when I say that PP-like standard FRs need not exhibit maximality is that they can be paraphrased with PPs whose DP complement is not maximal, i.e. it is not a definite DP or any other DP that can denote a maximal entity. As argued above, the DP the place(s) and the PP to the place(s) clearly do not denote the same semantic object. Nevertheless, there is a clear intuition that the semantic properties of to the place(s) are

[^40]related to the fact that it has a definite DP as its complement and that to the place(s) is semantically different from to a place/places. In other words, I went to the place(s) you told me to and I went to a place you told we to are not truth conditionally equivalent, therefore it follows from the principle of compositionality that to the place(s) and to a place/places are not semantically equivalent either.

From (40) to (44) examples are given of PP-like standard FRs that do not exhibit maximality, i.e. PP-like standard FRs that can be replace and paraphrased with PPs that have an indefinite DP as their complement, but not with PPs that have a definite DP complement. The examples are grouped and numbered according to the kind of PP that is used to paraphrase them (motion, location, time, manner). For each group/number, very similar examples are given from English and Italian together with their closest non-maximal/maximal PP paraphrases. The examples are such that the maximal PPs not only are not truth-conditionally equivalent to the corresponding PP-like standard FRs, but they also make the sentences they occur in degraded.
(40) PP-like standard FRs introduced by where in PP argument position (location)
a. For years, I lived ...
... [FR where it never snowed].
... \# [definite DP in the place(s) where it never snowed].
... [indefinite pp in a place/places where it never snowed].
b. Ho vissuto per anni ...
... [FR dove non nevicava mai].
... \# [defaite Dp nel posto/nei posti dove non nevicava mai].
... [indefnite op in un posto/in posti dove non nevicava mai].
(41) PP-like standard FRs introduced by where in PP argument position (movement)
a. Captain Kirk went ...
... [FR where no man had gone before].
... \# [definite DP to the place(s) where no man had gone before].
... [indefnite pp to a place/places where no man had gone before].
b. Il capitano Kirk e il suo equipaggio sono arrivati ...
... [rR dove nessuno era mai arrivato prima].
... \# [definite Dp nel posto/nei posti dove nessuno era mai arrivato prima].
... [indefnite in un posto/in posti dove nessuno era mai arrivato prima].
(42) PP-like standard FRs introduced by where in adjunct position
a. Next year, I want to spend my vacation...
... [FR where there are no tourists].
... \# [definite DP in the place(s) where there are no tourists].
... [indefiuite DP in a place/places where there are no tourists].
b. L'anno prossimo voglio trascorrere le vacanza ...
... [FR dove non ci sono turisti].
... \# [definite dp nel posto/nei posti dove non ci sono turisti].
... [indefinite in un posto/in posti dove non ci sono turisti].
(43) PP-like standard FRs introduced by when
a. You said Gemnaro has class and office hours every week on Tuesday and Thursday. Do you think I could introduce myself...
... [FR when he is in for his office hours], ...
... \# [definite $D P$ at the time when he is in for his office hours], ..
... [indefinte DP sometime/at a time when he is in for his office hours], ...
... if he is not talking to any students?
a'. Hai detto che Gennaro insegna e riceve gli studenti ogni settimana di martedi e giovedi. Credi che sia inopportuno presentarmi a lui ...
... [FR quando è in università per il ricevimento], ...
... \# [definite dp la volta che è in università per il ricevimento], ...
... [indefinite DP qualche volta che è in università per il ricevimento], ...
... se non è impegnato con gli studenti?
b. If you don't want to waste too much time, you should go to the post office to mail that letter...
... [FR when it is not too crowded], ...
... \# [defimite DP at the time when it is not too crowded], ...
... [indefinite DP at a time when it is not too crowded],...
$\ldots$ that is early in the morning or in the middle of the afternoon.
b'. Se non vuoi perdere tropppo tempo, dovresti andare in posta a spedire quella lettera ...
... [FR quando non c'è troppa gente], ...
... \#[definite DP nel momento in cui non c'è troppa gente], ...
... [indefinite DP in un momento in cui non c'è troppa gente],
... cioè al mattino presto o nel primo pomeriggio.
(44) PP-like stondard FRs introduced by how
a. Barbara Cook managed to sing that old song ...
... [FR how I've never heard it sung before].
... \#[definite Dp in the way(s) l've never heard it sung before].
... [indefinite p in in way I've never heard it sung before].
a'. Oggi il mio cavallo ha corso
... [FR come non avevo mai corso prima].
... \#[definite DP nel modo in cui non avevo mai corso prima].
... [indefnite DP in un modo in cui non avevo mai corso prima].
b. I hate those times when word processors behave
... [FR how you'd never expect them to].
... \#[definite DP in the way(s) you'd never expect them to].
... [indefinite DP in a way/ways you'd never expect them to].
b'. Il mio computer ha iniziato a comportarsi
... [FR come non si era mai comportato prima].
... \# [definite DP nel modo/nei modi in cui non si era mai comportato prima].
... [indefinite $D P$ in un modo/in modi in cui non si era mai comportato prima].

### 3.4. Conclusions: Non-maximal free relatives and wh-words

In this chapter, I discussed existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs, which have been largely ignored in the literature. The reason why they are both particularly relevant for the purposes of the present work is because they are both introduced by the same wh-words as DP-like standard FRs, but neither of them refers to a maximal entity.

I argued that existential FRs always denote a set of entities that is quantified over by the existential quantifier in the lexical meaning of the matrix predicate. This would account for the distributional restrictions on existential FRs and their scopal properties. As for PP-like standard FRs, I argued that they never refer to maximal entities since they never refer to entities at all. I showed that PP-like standard FRs can always replaced and
paraphrased with PPs, therefore they must denote what PPs denote. Although I did not provide a compositional semantics for PPs or PP-like standard FRs, crucially I showed that PP-like standard FRs need not exhibit maximality, even if an extended notion of maximality for PPs is adopted, according to which a PP exhibits maximality if its DP complement denotes a maximal entity. Many examples were given of PP-like standard FRs that could be replaced and paraphrased with PPs with an indefinite (=non-maximal) DP as their complement, but not with PPs with a definite (=maximal) DP.

The conclusions of our discussion of existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs both support and strengthen the conclusions about the semantic contribution of wh-words that we reached in Chapter 2. Wh-words do not lexically encode maximality, contra Jacobson (1995). Otherwise wh-words could not occur in non-maximal constructions like existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs. On the other hand, as we have already discussed in Chapter 2, wh-words cannot lexically encode any existential force, otherwise we would not be able to account for maximality when it shows up in standard FRs. By looking at both DP-like standard FRs on the one hand and existential FRs and PP-like standard FRs on the other, we can conclude that the lexical meaning of wh-words must be free of any maximality or quantificational force.

## CHAPTER 4

## -ever Free Relatives: Maximal or Non-maximal?

## 4.1.-ever free relatives: a definition

I will call -ever free relatives (henceforth, -ever FRs) FRs introduced by wh-words with the ever suffix or its equivalent across languages (henceforth, eever words). Examples from English are given (1).
(1) a. I'll marry [-ever FR whoever you choose].
b. I tasted [-ever FR whatever Adam cooked].
c. You can smoke [-ever FR wherever the kids aren't playing].
d. I left [-ever rR whenever Flavio arrived].
e. I did it $\left[\right.$-ever ER however you did it]. ${ }^{1}$
-ever FRs are FRs according to the definition in Chapter 1: 1) they contain a morphologically complex word with a wh-word as its root; 2) they are clauses with a gap in argument or adjunct position (e.g. the object of choose in (1a), or a locative adjunct in (1c)); and, 3) they can always be replaced with truth-conditionally equivalent DPs or PPs, as shown in (2) below.

[^41](2) a. I'll marry [ever FR whoever you choose].
a'. I'll marry [Dp any person you choose].
b. I tasted [-ever FR whatever Adam cooked].
b'. I tasted [Dp the food/things Adam cooked].
c. You can smoke [-ever FR wherever the kids aren't playing].
c'. You can smoke [pp in any place where the kids aren't playing].
d. Ieft [-ever FR whenever Flavio arived].
d'. I left [pp at the time that Flavio arrived].
e. I did it [-ever FR however you did it].
$e^{\prime}$. I did it [pp in the way you did it].

Notice that although the pairs above are roughly truth-conditionally equivalent, they cannot be used in exactly the same contexts. For instance, ( $2 b^{\prime}$ ) can be immediately followed by naming the things that Adam cooked (I tasted the food Adam cooked, i.e. the stuffed mushrooms and the strawberry cheesecake.), while (2b) cannot (I tasted whatever Adam cooked, i.e. the stuffed mushrooms and the strawberry cheesecake.). This is because in this case whatever seems to signal that the speaker somehow does not know or remember the precise identity and/or the name of what Adam cooked. I will return to these non-truth conditional differences later on.

The bracketed strings in (3) look identical or very similar to the -ever FR in (1).
(3) a. [Whoever you choose], you won't make a bad choice.
b. [Whatever Adam cooked], I am sure that your food is still better.
c. [Wherever the kids were playing], Ithink it was your responsibility to follow them and look after them carefully.
d. [Whenever his partner gets back in the evening], he always starts eating dinner at 7 PM .
e. [However you did it], I won't change my mind about it.

Nevertheless, the bracketed strings in (3) are not -ever FRs, since they are not FRs at all. In fact, there is no DP or PP that can replace and paraphrase them. The bracketed strings in (3) are interpreted like concessive clauses and can be paraphrased with no
matter clauses, as in (4).
(4) a. [No matter who you choose], you won't make a bad choice.
b. [No matter what Adam cooked], I am sure that your food is still better.
c. [No matter where the kids were playing], I think it was your responsibility to follow them and look after them carefully.
d. [No matter when his partner gets back in the evening], he always starts eating dinner at 7 PM.
e. [No matter how you did it], I won't change my mind about it.

Although there is the feeling that -ever FRs and strings like the ones in (3) are somehow related, their semantic behavior is clearly different and I do not have much to say about it. A preliminary partial semantic analysis of this construction can be found in Izvorski (2000), who calls this construction "free adjunct free relatives". She starts from the semantic analyses that have been suggested for -ever FRs that I will discuss later and argues that a concessive interpretation can be derived from that. Unfortunately, she does not show how this result can be obtained compositionally. So it is not clear if this construction tells us anything more about the semantic contribution of wh-words. For the time being, I assume that it does not. Therefore, I keep the definition of FRs given in Chapter 1 and conclude from that that the construction in (3) is not a FR.

### 4.2. Some cross-linguistic generalizations about -ever free relatives

The examples of ever FRs in (1) are almost identical to the examples of English standard FRs in Chapter 2, which I have repeated below in (5).
(5) a. I'll marry [standard fR who you choose].
b. I tasted [standard $F$ r what Adam cooked].
c. You can't smoke [standard fr where the kids are playing].
d. I left [standard fr when Flavio arrived].
e. I did it [standard FR how you did it].

This is just to show that all wh-words that can occur in standard FRs have an -ever form that can occur in -ever FRs as well, at least in English. There are languages in which not all the wh-words that can introduce standard FRs have a corresponding -ever form. For instance, Italian can form standard FRs introduced by chi 'who', dove 'where', quando 'when', and come 'how' (cf. Chapter 2, § ??), but only chi and dove have an -ever variant, -unque being the equivalent of ever: chiunque 'whoever' and dovunque 'wherever'. Quandunque is not even a word in Italian, while comunque only means 'in any case'.

The next two generalizations about -ever FRs hold crosslinguistically, by contrast.

### 4.2.1. Generalization 1: no whyever free relatives

In the same way that why cannot occur in standard FRs (6b), there is no -ever FR (6a) introduced by whyever.
(6) a. ${ }^{*}$ I am sure he did it $[-$ ever FR whyever she did it].
b.*I am sure he did it [standard fR why she did it].

Italian exhibits a similar pattern. Perché 'why' cannot occur in standard FRs and similarly the -ever form (perchiunque or percunque) is not even in the lexicon.
(7) a.* L'ho fatto [perchiunque l'hai fatto tu].
it-have.1s whyever it-have. 2 S done you
('I did it for whatever reason you did it.')
$a^{\prime}$.* L'ho fatto [perché l'hai fatto tu]. ${ }^{2}$
it-have. 1 s why it-have. 2 s done you
(I did it for the same reason you did it.')

[^42]
### 4.2.2. Generalization 2: [whutever/whichever + NP $]$ ws. *[what/which + NP $]$

There are wh-words that cannot occur in standard FRs, but have an -ever form that occurs in -ever FRs. The examples in (8) show a clear pattern: ever FRs can be introduced by complex wh-phrases, while standard FRs cannot. In particular, complex wh-phrases in -ever FRs consist of an -ever wh-word that occurs in a determiner-like or modifier-like position followed by a $N P$ ( $8 \mathrm{a}, \mathrm{d}$ ), or an adverb (8b), or an adjective (8c).
(8) a. I will read [-ever $\mathrm{FR}[\mathrm{Dp}$ whatever/whichever (good) book] you just read].
a'.* I will read [standard FR [Dp what/which (good) book] you just read].
b. I can drive [-ever FR [Advp however slowly] you want me to].
b'. * I can drive [standard fr [Adve how slowly] you want me to].
c. I am sure he will grow [-ever $\mathrm{rR}^{[\text {Adjp }}$ however tall] his father was].
$c^{\prime}$. * I am sure he will grow [standard fR [Adjp how tall] his father was].
d. ?I am sure that my dad will pay for [-ever FR [DP whosever/whoever's car] I damage].
d'. *I am sure that my dad will pay for [standard fr [ Dp whose car] I damage].

Languages can vary in the complex wh-phrases that can occur in -ever FRs in a way that depends on the ever forms that are available in the lexicon. Language specific idiosyncrasies determine the set of determiner-like or modifier-like -ever forms. For instance, in Italian only quale 'which' + NP has a corresponding morphologically complex form that can occur in -ever FRs: qualunque 'whichever'. As discussed above, com-unque (lit. 'how-ever') is used only with the meaning of 'in any case', while the morphologically complex form of che 'what' is not even in the lexicon. This may be due to some blocking effect, since the potential form cunque/chiunque 'whatever' would sound (almost) identical to chiunque 'whoever'.

### 4.2.3. Conclusions: ever free relatives are free relatives

To sum up, it is crosslinguistically attested that 1) the wh-words that introduce
standard FRs, or a subset of those, have a corresponding -ever form that can introduce -ever FRs; 2) in the same way that standard FRs cannot be introduced by why or its equivalents across languages, -ever FRs cannot be introduced by the -ever form of why, which is often not even in the lexicon; ${ }^{3}$ 3) -ever FRs can be introduced by complex wh-phrases in which the -ever wh-word occurs in a determiner-like or modifier-like position.

I take the similarities in 1) and 2) above to be enough to conclude that -ever FRs and standard FRs form a natural class and it makes sense to have a definition that groups them together, like the one in Chapter 1. If this assumption is correct, by looking at the semantic behavior of -ever FRs and their wh-words, we can draw conclusions about the semantic contribution of FRs and wh-words in general. It would desirable if these conclusions were also able to account for the difference in 3), i.e. why -ever FRs can be introduced by complex wh-phrases, while standard FRs cannot. This is what I will try to do in the remainder of this chapter.

### 4.3. The semantic behavior of -ever free relatives

### 4.3.1. Two readings for -ever free relatives?

Two readings have been recognized for -ever FRs in the literature. Following Dayal (1997), I call them the identity reading and the free choice reading. Each example in (9) illustrates a different reading (both examples from Dayal (1997: ex. 10a,b)).

[^43](9) a. [rR Whichever movie is now playing at the Avon] is making a lot of money.
b. [ FR Whichever movie plays at the Avon] makes a lot of money.

The -ever FRs in (9) could be roughly paraphrased as follows:
(10) a. [op The movie that is now playing at the Avon, but I don't remember which,] is making a lot of money.
b. [pp Any movie that plays at the Avon] makes a lot of money.
(9a) illustrates the identity reading. The -ever FR in (9a) refers to a specific movie, whose identity is unknown, as made clear by its paraphrase in (10a). On the other hand, (9b) illustrates the free choice reading. The -ever FR in (9b) refers to any movie that plays at the Avon, as made clear by its paraphrase in (10b).

Do the two readings above imply that ever FRs are intrinsically ambiguous?

### 4.3.2. ever free relatives as quantified expressions

Tredinnick (1994) argues that -ever FRs are ambiguous. When -ever behaves like a universal quantifier, then -ever FRs are interpreted as universally quantified expressions (our free choice reading), otherwise -ever FRs are interpreted like specific indefinites (our identity reading).

Dayal (1997) points out that the latter is not tenable, since -ever FRs have different familiarity requirements from specific indefinites, as shown by the contrast in (11) (adapted from Dayal's example (14)).
(11) a. Mary bought something. [Whatever she bought] was expensive.
b. Mary bought something ${ }_{1}$. [Something she bought $]_{1}$ was expensive.

Other arguments have been suggested in favor of an analysis of ever FRs as universals:
(12) Polarity item licensing (Tredinnick 1993)
a. He got in trouble for what*(ever) he ever did to anyone.
b. I will go where*(ever) the hell you go.
(13) QVE (Tredinnick 1993)
a. When I go to the store, I mostly buy potatoes.
b. Whenever I go to the store, I mostly buy potatoes.
(14) Type difference and pseudo-clefts (latridou and Variokosta 1998)
a. What(ever) Mary bought was expensive. predicational
b. What(*ever) Mary bought was Barriers. specificational
(15) Missing prepositions (Larson 1987)

I will live in what*(ever) towns you live.
(16) Negation (Dayal 1997)

I didn't like *what/whatever Sue ordered, but I liked most of it.

### 4.3.3. -ever free relatives as modalized definites (Dayal 1997)

Contra Larson (1987), Tredinnick (1994) and Iatridou and Varlokosta (1998), Dayal (1997) points out that the two readings are not instances of ambiguity, but they result from the interplay of the unambiguous semantic contribution of wh-words, tense, and aspect.

Her basic proposal is that an -ever FR is a standard FR with an extra modal dimension and is interpreted with respect to a set of alternatives to the world of evaluation, which she calls 'i(dentity)-alternatives'. For instance, Jie ate what Adam cooked means that Jie ate the thing(s) Adam cooked in the actual world, while Jie ate whatever Adam cooked means that in every world that is an i-altemative, Jie ate the thing(s) Adam cooked in that i -alternative. An i-alternative is a world that is identical to the actual world except for what the standard FR denotes. Let us assume that Adam cooked Tuscan soup. Then, an
i-alternative is a world that is identical to the actual world except that Adam did not cook Tuscan soup in that world, but something else.

Dayal adopts a translation language that allows explicit quantification over worlds (Gallin 1975) and formalizes her proposal as follows: ${ }^{4}$
(17) a. whatever $\left[\right.$ [ $\left.\ldots . t_{i} \ldots\right]$ denotes at $w=$ $\lambda Q \forall i$-alternative $\epsilon f(w)(s)[Q(i)(x[P(i)(x)]]]$
where $P$ is the property derived by abstracting over $x_{i}$ in the IP denotation.
b. $f(w)(s)=\left\{w^{\prime}: \forall p\left[s\right.\right.$ believes $\left.\left.p(w) \rightarrow p\left(w^{\prime}\right)\right]\right\}$ for a world of evaluation $w$ and a speaker $s, \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})$ is the set of worlds in which the speaker's beliefs about $w$ hold.
c. a world $w^{\prime} \in f(w)(s)$ is an $i$-alternative iff there exists some $w^{\prime \prime \prime} \in f(w)(s)$, such that $\mathrm{x}\left[\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{w}^{\prime}\right)(\mathrm{x})\right] \neq \mathrm{x}\left[\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{w}^{\prime \prime}\right)(\mathrm{x})\right]$

A standard FR like what Adam cooked denotes a maximal individual in the actual world $w$, i.e. the thing(s) that Adam cooked in $w(x[P(\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{x})]$ in (17)). On the other hand, we can imagine worlds $w^{\prime}, w^{\prime \prime}$, etc. that are exactly identical to the actual world $w$ except for the thing(s) that Adam cooked; in other words, $w^{\prime}$, $w^{\prime \prime}$, etc. differ only in the denotation of the standard FR what Adam cooked $(\mathrm{xx}[\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{x})]) \neq\left(\mathrm{xx}\left[\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{w}^{\prime}\right)(\mathrm{x})\right]\right) \neq$ $\left(\mathrm{xx}\left[\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{w}^{\prime \prime}\right)(\mathrm{x})\right]\right.$ etc., in $\left.(17 \mathrm{c})\right)$. The worlds $w^{\prime}, w^{\prime \prime}$, etc. are all i-alternatives with respect to that standard FR what Adam cooked and its denotation. The corresponding eever FR whatever Adam cooked introduces a modal dimension since its denotation depends on those i-alternatives. According to (17), whatever Adam cooked denotes the set of the properties Q that the thing(s) that Adam cooked in all i-alternatives have. Crucially, what an ever FR like whatever Adam cooked denotes in each i-alternative is exactly what the

[^44]corresponding standard FR what Adam cooked would denote in the very same i-alternative.

Let us now look at the two sets of examples Dayal discusses to illustrate how her proposal can account for the two readings of -ever FRs. She starts by discussing the identity reading. I have slightly adapted (18), (19) and the following discussion from Dayal (1997: 27, 28, and p. 108)
(18) a. Adam is cooking something. [-ever FR Whatever Adam is cooking] uses onions.
b. $\forall i$-alternative $\in f(w)(s)[$ uses-onions $(i)(\operatorname{cx}[$ cooking $(i)(x)(a)])]$
c. $[\operatorname{xx}[$ cooking $(\mathrm{i}-\mathrm{alt} \mathrm{t})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})] \rrbracket]=$ ratatouille
$\llbracket \mathrm{xx}[\operatorname{cooking}(\mathrm{i}-\mathrm{alt} 2)(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})] \rrbracket=$ lentils
$\llbracket \mathrm{xx}\left[\right.$ cooking $\left.\left.\left(\mathrm{i}-\mathrm{alt} \mathrm{I}_{2}\right)(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right] \rrbracket\right]=$ goulash
(19) a. [standard FR What Adam is cooking] uses onions.
b. [uses-onions(w)(xx[cooking(w)(x)(a)])]
(18a) with an -ever FR says that as far as the speaker is concerned, in all the relevant i-alternatives at $w$, the dish being cooked by Adam uses onions. Or more colloquially, the speaker intends the assertion to hold regardless of the identity of the dish. The assertoric force is therefore attributive. (19a) with a standard FR also lends itself to such an interpretation. But in addition it allows for an interpretation in which the relation between the actual thing that Adam is cooking and the property of using onions is accidental. That is, the assertion can be based on the speaker's belief about a particular entity. The description is simply an expedient way of referring to it. Dayal gives the contrast in (20) (her examples (29)).
(20) a.* Whatever Adam is cooking, namely ratatouille, uses onions.
b. What Adam is cooking, namely ratatouille, uses onions.

As Dayal puts it, "we can [...] think of the contribution of eever as forcing some amount of attributiveness in the semantics" (p.109).

As for the free choice reading of -ever FRs, Dayal claims that its difference from the identity reading can be derived in the same way as the difference between generic and non-generic interpretation, i.e. it depends on whether the world variable is free, hence contextually anchored, or bound by a generic/temporal operator. One reading rather than the other is usually triggered/favored by tense and aspect. For instance, the logical representation of (21a) given in (21b) is very similar to the logical representation of (18a) given in (18b), the only major difference being the contextual variable $C$ playing the usual role of restricting quantification over relevant occasions of Adam's cooking.
(21) a. [-ever FR Whatever Adam cooks] uses onions.
b. $\forall \mathrm{w}[\mathrm{C}(\mathrm{w})][\forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})$ [uses-onions(i)(xx[cooking(i)(x)(a) $)]]]$

Dayal's account establishes a very strict relation between standard FRs and eever FRs: the latter are always derived from the former plus the modality trigger -ever. In other words, the denotation of -ever FRs is relativized to i-alternatives, but in each i-alternative they behave like definite DPs, and not like universals. Dayal supports this conclusion with the following piece of evidence, based on scopal properties: ${ }^{5}$
(22) a. Mary has read two thirds of every book in the series.
b. Mary has read two thirds of whatever books are in the series.
c. Mary has read two thirds of the books in the series.

[^45](23) a. Mary ate only a portion of every dish she was served.
b. Mary ate only a portion of whatever dishes she was served.
c. Mary ate only a portion of the dishes she was served.

Neither (22a) nor (23a) are ambiguous. The universally quantified DP every NP can only scope above two thirds or a portion of. For every book in the series, Mary has read two thirds of it and, similarly, for every dish she was served, she ate only a portion of it (distributive reading).

On the other hand, both (22b) and (23b) are ambiguous. The -ever FRs can scope either above or below two thirds or a portion of. (22b) and (23b) can mean what (22a) or (23a) mean (distributive reading), but they can also mean that Mary has read two thirds of the total number of books in the series or that Mary has eaten only part of the total number of dishes she was served (collective partitive reading). Dayal points out that the very same ambiguity is found with the definite DPs in (22c) and (23c).

### 4.3.4. Adapting Dayal's proposal to our semantics for wh-words

Dayal (1997) is the most refined and detailed attempt to deal with the complex semantic issues related to -ever FRs. On the other hand, her assumptions about the semantic contributions of wh-words contrast with what we concluded from the previous chapters. For Dayal, wh-words lexically trigger maximality (as in Jacobson (1995)), but what standard and existential FRs have shown us so far is that wh-words are better analyzed as set restrictors. Dayal's proposal can be easily adapted to our semantics for wh-words. What is crucial for her is that maximality shows up as the final semantic contribution of a plain FR before the semantic contribution of the -ever morpheme applies (17). There is
no need in her account for maximality to be lexically triggered by wh-words. Therefore, at least two options are available. Either maximality is lexically triggered by the -ever morpheme, i.e. it applies to a set-denoting expression $P$ and returns a set of sets $Q$ that is crucially built on the maximal entity of P (24), or the -ever morpheme in -ever FRs behaves like the matrix predicate in standard DP-like FRs, i.e. it selects for an entity-denoting expression and $\delta$ applies as a default strategy to repair the type-mismatch (25).
(24) -ever $\rightarrow \quad \lambda P \lambda Q \forall i$-alternative $\in f(w)(\mathrm{s})[Q(i)(\sigma x[P(i)(x)])]^{6}$
(25) -ever $\rightarrow \quad \lambda x \lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})(x(\mathrm{i}))]$

In the remainder of this section I will give and discuss two derivations for the example of an ever FR in (21), repeated as (26) below, that I hope will help to make it clearer how our conclusions about wh-words can be adapted to Dayal's proposal.
(26) [-ever FR Whatever Adam cooks] uses onions.

Although Dayal does not give all the details of her semantic analysis, in particular she does not show us what LF she is assuming, her semantics in (17) seems to require -ever FRs to undergo some sort of LF movement for then taking the matrix clause denotation as their argument.

This approach sounds plausible, given the alternation whereby -ever FRs can be overtly dislocated and have a resumptive pronoun occur in the argument position with no change in their truth conditions, as shown in (27)-(28).

[^46](27) a. [Whatever Adam cooks] uses onions.
b. [Whatever Adam cooks], it uses onions.
(28) a. Jie eats [whatever Adam cooks].
b. [Whatever Adam cooks], Jie eats

In what follows, I will assume that ever FRs are always left-dislocated at LF and leave a trace in the original position. In other words, (27a) and (27b) will have the same LF in (29).
(29) [-ever FR Whatever Adam cooks $]_{\mathrm{m}} \mathrm{t}_{\mathrm{m}}$ uses onions.

Strictly speaking, the LF movement I am assuming is unnecessary for -ever FR in the subject position. I will assume it anyway for the sake of simplicity.

Let us start with the option in which the ever morpheme takes a set-denoting expression. The LF representation of (26) is given in (30). The relevant steps of the semantic derivation are given in (31). The others are identical to the steps shown and discussed in Chapter 2.
(30)

(31) $F R$

1. $\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{FR}}{ }^{\prime} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}\left[\operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$
2. what $\rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \times[$ inanimate $(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})]$
3. $\mathrm{CP}_{\mathrm{FR}, 1} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \mathrm{X}[$ inanimate $(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})]\left(\lambda \mathrm{x}\left[\operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$
$=\lambda x\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.{ }^{\prime}(i)(x) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$
4. -ever $\rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{P} \lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})(\sigma x[\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})])]$
5. $\left[\mathrm{CP}_{\mathrm{FR}, 2}\right]_{\mathrm{m}} \rightarrow$
$\lambda P \lambda Q \forall i$-alternative $\in f(w)(s)[Q(i)(\sigma x[P(i)(x)]]](\lambda x[$ inanimate $(i)(x) \wedge$ $\left.\operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$ )
$=\lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\epsilon \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})\left(\sigma \mathrm{x}\left[\right.\right.\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.\left.{ }^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)\right]$
Matrix clause
6. $\mathrm{C}^{\prime} \rightarrow \lambda y$ [use-onions(i)(y)]
$F R+$ matrix clause
7. $\mathrm{CP} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})\left({ }^{\wedge} \sigma \mathrm{x}\left[\right.\right.\right.$ inanimate' $\left.\left.\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)\right]$
( 2 y [use-onions $(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{y})]$ )
$=\forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\right.$ use-onions' $(\mathrm{i})\left(\sigma \mathrm{x}\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate' $\left.\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$

Let us now look at the other option in which the ever morpheme takes an entity-denoting expression. The LF representation of (26) is given in (32). The relevant steps of the semantic derivation are given in (33).
(32)

(33) FR

1. $\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{FR}}{ }^{\prime} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}\left[\operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$
2. what $\rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \times[$ inanimate $(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})]$
3. $\mathrm{CP}_{\mathrm{FR}, 1} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \mathrm{x}[$ inanimate' $(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})]\left(\lambda \times\left[\operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$
$=\lambda x\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.{ }^{\prime}(i)(x) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(i)(x)(a)\right]$
4. $\delta \rightarrow \lambda X \sigma x[X(x)]\left(\lambda x\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate' $\left.\left.(i)(x) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$
5. $\left[\mathrm{CP}_{\mathrm{FR}, 2}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \sigma \times[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]\left(\lambda \times\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$ $=\sigma x\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.{ }^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$
6. -ever $\rightarrow \lambda x \lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})(x(\mathrm{i}))]$
7. $\left[\mathrm{CP}_{\mathrm{FR}, 3}\right]_{\mathrm{m}} \rightarrow$
$\lambda \times \lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})(x(\mathrm{i}))]\left(\wedge^{\wedge} \sigma \mathrm{x}\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate' $\left.\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$
$=\lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})\left(\operatorname{ox}\left[\right.\right.\right.$ inanimate' $\left.\left.\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right]\right]$
Matrix clause
8. $\mathrm{C}^{\prime} \rightarrow \lambda y$ [use-onions $\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{y})\right]$
$F R+$ matrix clause
9. $\mathrm{CP} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{Q} \forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\mathrm{Q}(\mathrm{i})\left(\sigma \mathrm{x}\left[\right.\right.\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.\left.{ }^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right]\right]$ ( $\lambda \mathrm{y}$ [use-onions(i)(y)]) $=\forall \mathrm{i}$-alternative $\in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\right.$ [use-onions'(i)( $\sigma x$ [inanimate $\left.\left.\left.{ }^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{cook}^{\prime}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]\right]\right]$

### 4.4. Some objections to Dayal (1997)

### 4.4.1. Objection 1: the majority of who/*whoever

Although the contrast between -ever FRs and universally quantified DPs and the
paralielism between -ever FRs and definite DPs in (22) and (23) is real and intriguing, I do not find it totally convincing, because plural morphology on nouns seems to interfere. Every can be followed only by singular nouns (every book vs. *every books), while whatever can take either singular or plural nouns (whatever book and whatever books). Although Dayal does not discuss this difference, this is crucial for her argument. If we replace the plural NPs books and dishes (22b) and (23b) with their singular forms, $-e v e r$ FRs are no longer ambiguous, they exhibit only the distributive reading, i.e. the same reading as universally quantified DPs.
(34) a. Mary has read two thirds of whatever book is in the series.
b. Mary ate only a portion of whatever dish she was served.
(34a) cannot mean that Mary has read two thirds of the total number of books, nor can (34b) mean that Mary has eaten only part of the total number of dishes she was served. One could reply that this is due to the presupposition triggered by whatever and a singular countable noun: (34a) presupposes that there is only one book in the series and (34b) presupposes that there is only one dish that was served to Mary.

We can obviate the disturbing factor of the semantic contribution of nominal morphology by looking at phrasal wh-words like who and whoever. FRs introduced by who and whoever do not have any uniqueness requirement: neither (35a) nor (35b) presuppose that the policeman arrested only one person. Still FRs introduced by who and whoever behave differently when they are preceded by a complex determiner like the majority of. It is no longer a contrast between ambiguous sentences and unambiguous ones, but between sentences that are acceptable/interpretable and sentences that are not.

Standard FRs with who exhibit the same level of acceptability with or without the majority of (cf. (35a) and (35a'), while -ever FRs with whoever are fine only without the complex determiner ((35b) vs. (35b')). Interestingly, definite DPs behave like standard FRs ((35d) vs. (35d')), while universally quantified DPs pattern with -ever FRs in this regard ((35c) vs. (35c')).
(35) a. * The policeman arrested who the FBI asked him to.
a'.* The policeman arrested the majority of who the FBI asked him to, but not all of them.
b. The policeman arrested whoever the FBI asked him to.
$b^{\prime}$ ?(?) The policeman arrested the majority of whoever the FBI asked him to, but not all of them.
c. The policeman arrested the people the FBI asked him to.
c'. The policeman arrested the majority of the people the FBI asked him to, but not all of them.
d. The policeman arrested everybody the FBI asked him to.
d'. ?* The policeman arrested the majority of everybody the FBI asked him to, but not all of them.

A similar contrast is observed in Italian, with the advantage that standard FRs with chi 'who' are perfectly productive with no idiosyncratic restrictions (36).
(36) a. [Chi era alla manifestazione] indossava una maglietta rossa. who was at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red 'The people at the demonstration wore red T -shirts.'
a' La maggior parte di [chi era alla manifestazione] indossava una maglietta rossa. the most part of who was at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red 'Most people at the demonstration wore red T-shirts.'
b. [Chiunque era alla manifestazione] indossava una maglietta rossa. whoever was at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red 'Whoever was at the demonstration wore a red T -shirt.'
$b^{\prime}$. \# La maggior parte di [chiunque era alla manifestazione] indossava una maglietta rossa. the most part of whoever was at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red 'The majority of whoever was at the demonstration wore a red T-shirt.'
c. [Le persone alla manifestazione] indossavano una maglietta rossa. the people at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red 'The people at the demonstration wore a red T-shirt.'
c'. La maggior parte delle [persone alla manifestazione] indossavano una maglietta rossa. the most part of-the people at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red ' $\{$ The majority of/most $\}$ people at the demonstration wore a red T-shirt.'
d. [ Ogni persona alla manifestazione] indossava una maglietta rossa. every person at-the demonstration wore a $T$-shirt red 'Everybody at the demonstration wore a red T-shirt.'
d'.\# La maggior parte di [ogni persona alla manifestazione] indossava una maglietta rossa. the most part of every person at-the demonstration wore a T-shirt red 'The majority of every person at the demonstration wore a red T-shirt.'

The contrast between -ever FRs on the one hand and standard FRs and definite DPs on the other in (35) and (36) is unexpected under Dayal's analysis. -ever FRs are predicted to behave like standard FRs because they are basically standard FRs evaluated over a set of worlds, rather than just in the actual world. Since the definite-like properties of
standard FRs, i.e. maximality, come from the lexical properties of wh-words, ${ }^{7}$ and the semantics of -ever FRs is compositionally derived from that of standard FRs, -ever FRs are expected to exhibit maximality as well in each world of evaluation. But the data in (35) and (36) show that this is not the case.

### 4.4.2. Objection 2: quantificational variability

-ever FRs do not exhibit quantificational variability under adverbs of quantification. In this regard, they behave like quantified expressions and unlike definites and, crucially, unlike the corresponding DP-like standard FRs. I will show and discuss the relevant data in Chapter 5. Here I just want to point out that this behavior of ever FRs is unexpected under Dayal's approach. According to her, the only kind of quantification that applies in -ever FRs is over i-alternatives, i.e. worlds. Therefore, adverbs of quantification, in particular adverbs of quantity like for the most part, are expected to be able to quantify over the entities denoted by eever FRs, similarly to what they do with DP-like standard FRs. For instance, the Italian DP-like standard FR in (37a) is acceptable with or without the adverbial of quantification in bold. On the other hand, the corresponding eever FR in (37b) is impossible to interpret with the same adverbial of quantification, while it is fully acceptable without. But, if I understand Dayal's proposal correctly, (37b) should be acceptable also with the adverbial and receive an interpretation like ( 37 b ').

[^47](37) a. [fR Chi è di origini meridionali] è (in gran parte) basso. who is of origins Southern is in great part short.M.S 'People from Southern Italy are (for the most part) short.'
b. [rR Chiunque è di origini meridionali] è (\#in gram parte) basso. whoever is of origins Southern is in great part short.M.S 'Whoever is from Southern Italy is (for the most part) short.'
$b^{\prime} . \forall \mathrm{w}[\mathrm{C}(\mathrm{w})]\left[\forall \mathrm{i}-\mathrm{alternative} \in \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{w})(\mathrm{s})\left[\mathrm{MOST}_{\mathrm{x}}[\operatorname{short}(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})][\right.\right.$ from-Southern-Italy $\left.\left.(\mathrm{i})(\mathrm{x})]\right]\right]$

### 4.4.3. Objection 3: [whateverwhichever + NP] vs. *[what/which + NP]

Dayal's proposal also makes another problematic prediction. Since the semantics of -ever FRs is basically the same as standard FRs plus the modality introduced by -ever, every -ever wh-word should have a corresponding bare wh-word introducing a standard FR. This prediction is not borne out.

I am not even referring to language specific idiosyncratic restrictions. (For instance, English allows -ever FRs with whoever, while standard FRs with who are much more restricted. On the other hand, standard FRs with chi 'who' and -ever FRs with chiunque 'whoever' are equally productive in Italian.) The crucial contrast I have in mind is illustrated in (38). While (38a) were fully acceptable in English, (38b) is not acceptable at all. This would be unexpected if (38a) is compositionally derived from (38b) by adding a modal dimension.
(38) a. I'll buy whatever/whichever book you buy.
b.*''ll buy what/which book you buy.

This pattern is cross-linguistically attested. Languages with -ever FRs of the kind [whatever/whichever NP] do not seem to have standard FRs of the kind [what/which NP].

An example of this contrast in Italian is given in (39).
(39) a.

Comprerò qualunque libro comprerai tu.
Italian
buy.FUT.1s whichever book buy.FUT. 2 s you.S
'I'll buy whatever/whichever book you buy.'
b*Comprerò quale libro comprerai tu.
read.FUT. 1 s which book buy.FUT. 2 s you.S
('T'll buy which book you buy.')
Once again, the problem is rooted in Dayal's assumptions about the semantic contribution of wh-words. If maximality is part of the lexical meaning of wh-words, then there is no room for non-ad-hoc restrictions: all wh-words should trigger maximality. If the semantic contribution of (38a) is crucially based on that of (38b), then (38b) is expected to be acceptable and [what/which NP] should mean something very close to what [the NP] means.

Although I do not have an account for the contrast in (38)-(39), once again my approach to maximality and the semantic contribution of wh-words looks less problematic, as I will briefly discuss in the next section.

### 4.5. A suggestion about $[$ whatever/whichever +NP$]$ vs. " $[$ what/which +NP$]$

In Chapter 2, I argued that maximality in DP-like standard FRs is not lexically triggered by wh-words, but results from a strategy of type-mismatch resolution between a predicate looking for an individual-denoting expression and an argument that denotes a set of individuals. If no type-mismatch of this kind occurs, this strategy cannot apply. For instance, (40a) is fully acceptable because the matrix predicate buy selects for an entity-denoting complement, the standard FR what you buy in complement position
denotes a sortally homogeneous set of entities, and the type-mismatch repairing strategy can apply. On the other hand, in (40b) the matrix predicate buy still selects for an entity-denoting complement, but what/which book you buy in complement position denotes neither an entity nor a set of entities nor a generalized quantifier. So, neither standard function application nor our type-mismatch repairing strategy can apply, and the sentence is unacceptable.
(40) a. I'll buy [what you buy]. ${ }^{8}$
b.*1'll buy [what/which book you buy].

But what does the bracketed string in (40b) denote? So far, I have always assumed that a wh-word introduces a variable into the logical representation that has the same type and syntactic category as the element the wh-word stands for. For instance, the logical representation of the standard FR in (40a) would be (41). ${ }^{9}$
(41) [re what ${ }_{1}$ Adam buy $\left.t_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda x_{1<e r}\left[\right.$ buy $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})\right]$

I will assume something similar for (40b), together with the assumption that the complex wh-phrase is interpreted in situ except for the wh-word (42).
(42) [[what/which $]_{1}$ Adam buys $\left[\mathrm{t}_{1}\right.$ book $\left.]\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathbb{X}_{1<e \mathrm{t}, \mathrm{e}}\left[\right.$ buy $\left(\mathbf{X}_{1}(\right.$ book $)($ a) $\left.\left.)\right)\right]$
(42) denotes a set of functions each of which applies to a set of entities and returns an entity. This is different from both the entity required by the matrix predicate buy and the set of entities required for the type-mismatch repairing rule to apply. Therefore, the

[^48]type-mismatch cannot be fixed and the whole sentence I'll buy what/which book Adam buys is unacceptable.

### 4.6. Conclusions

In this chapter, I introduced ever FRs and I argued that they are FRs. Then I discussed their main semantic properties and some proposals that have been made to account for them. In particular, I presented Dayal (1997) in detail, since it is so far the most comprehensive and detailed attempt to spell out the semantic properties of ever FRs and account for them compositionally. Her basic idea is that an -ever FR is a standard FR with an extra modal dimension and is interpreted with respect to a set of alternatives to the world of evaluation. In other words, eever FRs are some sort of modalized definites. Crucially, Dayal assumes that wh-words encode maximality in their lexical meaning.

First, I showed how Dayal's proposal can be adapted to our conclusion that wh-words act as set restrictors. Then, I raised three objections to Dayal's proposal. Two of them deal with quantifying over -ever FRs: by means of a complex determiner like the majority of and by means of adverbials of quantification. In both cases, -ever FRs pattern like quantified DP and unlike definites, while Dayal's proposal would predict the opposite pattern. The third objection deals with the contrast between the cross-linguistically attested -ever FRs introduced by whatever/whichever + NP and the cross-linguistic ban on DP-like standard FRs introduced by what/which + NP.

Although I did not present an alternative analysis for ever FRs that can account for the three objections above, I think that my assumptions about the meaning of wh-words and
how to derive maximality for standard FRs are less problematic than Dayal's and offer more space for a possible solution of this puzzle. Before concluding, I will briefly mention why.

In Chapter 2, I proposed that standard FRs end up denoting a maximal individual by combining with $\delta$, as a last resort option to fix a type-mismatch. Since this is a default strategy, it does not apply if other options are available. In Chapter 3, I argued that this strategy does not apply to existential FRs since no type-mismatch occurs. The free variable introduced by the wh-word ends up being bound by the existential quantifier introduced by the matrix predicate. -ever FRs may be a similar example. The suffix -ever and its cross-linguistic equivalents may behave like a determiner-like element that takes a set-denoting expression and returns a generalized quantifier.

Along a similar line, I suggested that the reason why ever FRs introduced by whatever/whichever + NP are cross-linguistically attested, while DP-like standard FRs introduced by what/which +NP are not, is because what/which do not introduce a variable of type <e> when they occur before an N , but rather a variable of a higher type. Therefore, the type-mismatch repairing strategy I proposed for DP-like standard FRs cannot apply. DP-like standard FRs introduced by what/which + NP cannot fix the type-mismatch in any other way, therefore they are unacceptable. On the contrary, the type mismatch of -ever FRs introduced by whatever/whichever + NP can be solved by the quantificational properties of the -ever morpheme. Further research is needed to establish the precise properties of this element.

## CHAPTER 5

## Quantificational Variability in Free Relatives

### 5.1. Introduction

This chapter is devoted to discussing quantificational variability in FRs and what it tells us about the semantic contribution of FRs. The chapter is divided into two main parts. In the first part, I briefly introduce adverbials of quantification, quantificational variability effects with indefinites and wh-INTs, and how these effects have been used to argue that indefinites and wh-phrases do not have any quantificational force of their own (§5.2). I will conclude with two generalizations about kinds of DPs and the availability of quantificational variability effects (§5.3). In the second part ( $\$ 5.4$ ), I look at the behavior of adverbials of quantification with existential FRs (§ 5.4.2), -ever FRs (§5.4.3), and DP-like standard FRs (§ 5.4.1). As we will see, only the latter exhibit quantificational variability. The aim of this chapter is not to give an account for quantificational variability in FRs, let alone in DPs. Its only purpose is to show that way DP-like standard FRs interact with adverbials of quantification is the same as definite DPs, while existential FRs and -ever FRs pattern like quantified DPs. In other words, quantificational variability further supports the conclusions we independently reached in the previous chapter about the semantic properties of the different kinds of FRs.

### 5.2. Adverbials of quantification

The adverbs and the adverbial phrases (henceforth, adverbials for both) in (1) have been
labeled adverbials of quantification in the literature. ${ }^{1}$ I have borrowed both the examples and the subdivision into adverbials of frequency and adverbials of quantity from Lahiri (2002).

## (1) Adverbials of quantification

a. Adverbials of frequency
seldom, usually, always, often, generally, commonly, in general, frequently, mostly, rarely, now and then, in many cases, sometimes, never
b. Adverbials of quantity mostly, for the most part, partly, in part, largely, to a great extent, to some extent, with few exceptions, completely

Adverbials of quantification owe their name to the fact that they have been seen as being able to influence the quantificational properties of certain expressions within the sentence in which they occur (a.k.a. quantificational variability effects). For instance, adverbials of frequency have been claimed to modify (Lewis 1975) or determine (Heim 1982: Chapter 2) the quantificational properties of indefinites. In (2), three pairs of examples are given, such that the sentences in each pair are truth-conditionally equivalent. Crucially, the first sentence of each pair contains an indefinite DP (in a box) and an adverbial of frequency (in bold), while the second sentence lacks the adverbial of frequency and has the indefinite turned into a quantified DP (with the NP complement in a box and the quantifier in bold).

[^49](2) a. A basketball playen is always tall.
a'. Every basketball playen is tall.
b. Sometimes, a basketball player is tall.
$b^{\prime}$. Some basketball players are tall.
c. A basketball playen is mever tall.
c'. No basketball players are tall.

Heim (1982) and many others after her take the truth-conditional equivalences in (2) as evidence that indefinites lack their own quantificational force and their semantic contribution is just to introduce a free variable into the representation.

Developing a suggestion by Nishigauchi $(1986 ; 1990)$, Berman (1991; 1994) argues that adverbials of quantification can determine the quantificational force of wh-phrases as well, both in wh-INTs and in standard FRs. Berman gives examples like the ones in (3) and claims that they are truth-conditionally equivalent. ${ }^{2}$
(3) a. The principal usually finds out [wh-INT which students cheat on the final exam].
$a$. For most students who cheat on the final exam, the principal finds out of them that they cheat on the final exam.
b. With few exceptions, Mary knows [wh-INT which students submitted which abstracts to which conferences ].
$b^{\prime}$. For most triples of a student, an abstract and a conference such that the student submitted the abstract to the conference, Mary knows that the student submitted the abstract to the conference.
c. Maria seldom likes [FR who she meets].
c'. Few people Maria meets are such that she likes them.
d. [FR What Sue paints] is often beautiful.
d'. Many things Sue paints (i.e. many paintings by Sue) are beautiful.

[^50]The first sentence of each pair in (3) contains a wh-phrase (in a box) and an adverbial of frequency (in bold), while the second sentence lacks the adverbial of quantification and has the wh-phrase replaced with a quantified DP (with the noun in a box and the quantifier in bold). Along the lines of Heim's (1982) treatment for indefinites, Berman concludes that wh-phrases do not have quantificational force of their own, they just introduce a free variable into the representation.

Heim's and Berman's conclusions about quantificational variability effects are not the only possible ones. For instance, Chierchia $(1988,1992)$ and de Swart (1991) argue that adverbials of frequency quantify behave like Generalized Quantifiers over events or situations and the apparent quantification over entities is just an outcome of the interaction between entities and events or situations. On this view, more faithful paraphrases of the examples in (2a) and (3a) would be the ones in (4a) and (4b), respectively.
(4) a. For every relevant (minimal) situation, a basketball player in that situation is tall.
b. For most relevant (minimal) situations, the principal finds out [wh-NT which students in that situation cheat on the final exam].

Also, as Lahiri (2002) points out, indefinites and wh-phrases exhibit asymmetries in their interaction with adverbials of quantification. While both show quantificational variability with adverbials of frequency, only wh-phrases are sensitive to adverbials of quantity, as shown in (5).
(5) a. A basketball player is $\{$ often $/ *$ for the most part $\}$ tall.
b. [rR What you find at Wild Oats] is \{often/for the most part \} really expensive.
c. The principal usually/for the most part finds out [wh-Ni which students cheat on the final exam].

So, it is not clear whether adverbials of frequency and adverbials of quantity really form one class, and whether quantificational variability effects really argue for indefinites and wh-phrases to be semantically the same and for both to introduce a free variable into the representation. I will be non-committal on these issues, since the use I am going to make of quantificational variability in relation to FRs does not hinge on them. I refer the interested reader to de Swart (1991) for a detailed discussion of adverbials of frequency and the different proposals that have been made to account for their semantic behavior. I am not aware of any proposal for adverbials of quantity, except for the one in Lahiri (2002), which only deals with the interaction of adverbials of quantification with embedded wh-INTs.

### 5.3. Adverbials of quantification and kinds of $D P s$

In the previous chapters, we saw that ways to paraphrase FRs have been suggested that make use of different kinds of DPs. I briefly recapitulate these claims with the examples in (6). For the sake of readability, the examples are from English, whenever possible. $F R$ stands for a DP-like standard FR.
(6) Kinds of DPs that can paraphrase FRs
a. Definite DPs:

Jie ate [rR what Adam cooked]/[op the thing(s)/the food Adam cooked].
b. Generic bare plural DPs:

I don't like ?[FR where it is too dark]/[DP places where it is too dark].
c. Non-generic bare pural DPs:

1) I have [exist FR what to eat]/[DP things to eat]. New York English
2) Non ho [exist.fR con chi parlare] [DP persone concui parlare]. Italian not have. Is with who speak.INF / people with REL speak.INF 'I don't have people to talk to.'
d. Generic indefinite DPs:
[FR Chi dorme male]/[DP Una persona che dorme male] si sente sempre triste. Italian who sleeps poorly / a person that sleeps poorly CL feels always sad
'A person who sleeps poorly always feels sad.'
e. Non-generic indefinite DPs:
3) I have [exist. FR what to eat]/[DP something to eat].

New York English
2) Ho [exist.FR conchi parlare] /[pp delle persone concui parlare]. Italian have.1s with who speak.INF / some people with REL speak.INF 'I have someone/some people to talk to.'

## f. Universally quantified DPs:

1) Jie ate [FR what Adam cooked]/[DP everything/all the things Adam cooked].
2) ?[-ever FR Whoever sleeps poorly $] /[$ DP Everybody who sleeps poorly $]$ always feels sad.

If the paraphrases above are correct, we expect each pair $\operatorname{FR} / D P$ to exhibit the same quantificational variability effects. The remainder of the chapter is devoted to testing this expectation and showing how the results give further support to our conclusions about the semantic properties of FRs from the previous chapters.

The behavior of the six kinds of DP in (6) with respect to quantificational variability can be summarized by means of the following generalizations:
(7) Generalizations about quantificational variability effects of some $D P_{S}$

Generalization 1: adverbiais of frequency. Universally quantified DPs, non-generic bare plural DPs and non-generic indefinite DPs do not show quantificational variability effects with adverbials of frequency; all the other DPs in (6) do.

Generalization 2: adverbials of quamity. Plural definite DPs and generic bare plural DPs show quantificational variability effects with adverbials of quantity; all the other DPs in (6) do not.

Table 1 spells out the generalizations in (7). The parenthesized number in each box with YES or NO refer to the example in (8) and (9) that illustrates that claim. Whenever possible, I have given examples in which nothing else but the adverbial of quantification in bold can interact with the underlined DP, so that the impossibility of this interaction results in the unacceptability of the whole sentence.

Table 1. Quantificational variability effects according to DPs and adverbials

|  | Adverbials of frequency | Adverbials of quantity |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Definite DPS | YES (8a) | YES (9a) |
| Generic bare plural DPs | YES (8b) | YES (9b) |
| Non-generic bare plural DPs | NO (8c) | NO (9c) |
| Generic indefinite DPs | YES (8d) | NO (9d) |
| Non-gemeric indefinite DPs | NO (8e) | NO (9e) |
| Universally quantified DPS | NO (8f) | NO (9f) |

(8) DPS and adverbials of frequency
a. The cakes Adam bakes are often very good.
$=\mathrm{Many} / \mathrm{most}$ cakes Adam bakes are very good.
b. Italians from the South are often dark-skinned. $=\mathbb{M}$ any/most Italians from the South are dark-skinned.
c. I often have people I can talk to when I am sad.
$\neq$ I have mamy/* most people I can talk to when I am sad.
d. An Italian from the South is often dark-skinned.
$=$ Many/most Italian from the South are dark-skinned.
e.\#Some Italians from the South are olten dark-skinned.
$\neq$ Many/mose Italians from the South are dark-skinned.
f. \# Every Italian from the South is often dark-skinned. $\neq$ Many/most Italians from the South are dark-skinned.
(9) DPs and adverbials of quantity
a. The Italians from the South who I know are for the most part dark-skinned. $=$ Many $/$ most Italians from the South who I know are dark-skinned.
b. Italians from the South are for the most part dark-skinned.
$=$ Many/most Italians from the South are dark-skinned.
c. For the most part, I have people I can talk to when I am sad. $\neq$ I have many/*most people I can talk to when I am sad.
d. \#An Italian from the South is for the most part dark-skinned. $\neq$ Many/most Italians from the South are dark-skinned.
e. \#Some Italians from the South are for the most part dark-skimed. $\neq$ Many/most Italians from the South are dark-skinned.
f. \# Every Italian from the South is for the most part dark-skinned. $\neq$ Many $/$ most Italians from the South are dark-skinned.

### 5.4. Quantificational variability effects in free relatives ${ }^{3}$

In this section, I am going to look at the presence or absence of quantificational variability effects in different kinds of FRs. The results of this short investigation will be interpreted in light of the generalizations in (7) and will be used to further support the main conclusions about the semantic contribution of FRs from the previous chapters. I will start by discussing DP-like standard FRs (§5.4.1), then I will move to existential FRs (§ 5.4.2), and I will conclude with -ever FRs (§ 5.4.3). As we will see, DP-like standard FRs exhibit quantificational variability under adverbials of quantification and therefore pattern like plural definites and generic bare plurals, while existential FRs and -ever FRs pattern like quantified expressions, since they do not show quantificational variability.

I will not discuss PP-like standard FRs since quantificational variability is hard to test with them because of independent constraints. The easiest configuration for a constituent to exhibit quantificational variability is subject position, but PP-like standard FRs can never occur in subject position by definition.

### 5.4.1.DP-like standard free relatives

In Chapter 2, we concluded that DP-like standard FRs are semantically very close to definite DPs since they both denote a maximal entity. If this conclusion is correct, it predicts DP-like standard FRs to behave like definite DPs as far as their interaction with

[^51]adverbials of quantification is concerned. This predication is borne out, as will be shown in § 5.4.1.1 and § 5.4.1.2.

### 5.4.1.1 Quantificational variability with adverbials of frequency

DP-like standard FRs show quantificational variability with adverbials of frequency. (10) gives examples from English. Each of them is paired with the sentence resulting from replacing the DP-like standard $F R$ with a quantified DP that roughly paraphrases it.
(10) a. [FR What you find at a yard sale] is often junk.
$a^{\text {a }}$. [Dp Many things you find at a yard sale] are junk.
b. I almost never like [FR where he takes me to dinner], but the restaurant we went to last night was not bad at all.
b'. I like [pp almost none of the places he takes me to dinner], but the restaurant we went to last night was not bad at all.
c. I always hate [ ${ }_{\mathrm{FR}}$ when you yell like that].
$c^{\prime}$. I hate [ DP every occasion when you yell like that].
d. [rR How he dances] often looks really ridiculous.
d'. [DP Many of the ways he dances] look really ridiculous.
DP-like standard FRs in Italian behave the same. I will give just an example with chi 'who' to show that the reason why I did not give an example with who in (10) is just because this kind of DP-like standard FR is not very productive in English (cf. Chapter 1), and not because there is anything special about it in relation to adverbials of frequency.
(11) a. [rR Chi è di origini meridionali] è spesso basso.

Italian who is of origins Southern is often short.M.S
'A person who is from Southern Italy is often short.'/People from Southern Italy are often short."
b. [Dp Molte persone di origini meridionali] sono basse. many people.F.P of origins Southern are.3p shore.F.P 'Many people from Southem Italy are short.'

The examples in (10) and (11) clearly show that DP-like standard FRs exhibit quantificational variability with adverbials of frequency. If we compare the behavior of DP-like standard FRs and the behavior of the different kinds of DPs listed in $\S 5.3$ with respect to adverbials of frequency, we see that DP-like standard FRs do not pattern like universally quantified DPs, non-generic bare plural DPs, or non-generic indefinite DPs. This brings further evidence against the hypothesis that DP-like standard FRs are universally quantified DPs or non-generic indefinites and it is fully compatible with our conclusion in Chapter 2 that DP-like standard FRs semantically behave like definite DPs.

### 5.4.1.2 Quantificational variability with adverbials of quantity

DP-like standard FRs introduced by what exhibit quantificational variability effects with adverbials of quantity, as shown in (12).
(12) a. [FR What I bought at the yard sale] is for the most part junk.
$=[$ dpp Most (of the) things I bought at the yard sale] are junk.
b. [rR What I bought at the yard sale] is in part junk.
$=[\mathrm{DP}$ Some of the things I bought at the yard sale $]$ are junk.

DP-like standard FRs introduced by chi 'who' in Italian exhibit similar effects, as shown in (13).
(13) a.(?) [Chiè di sinistral ha in yran parte votato contro Berlusconi alle ultime elezioni. Who is of left has in great part voted against $B$. at-the last elections 'Most leffists voted against Berlusconi in the last elections.'
b. (?) [Chiè di sinistra] ha solo in parte votato contro Berlusconi alle ultime elezioni. who is of left has only in part voted against $B$. at-the last elections 'Only some leftists voted against Berlusconi in the last elections.'

The examples in (12) and (13) above show that DP-like standard FRs behave like definite DPs and bare plurals as far as exhibit quantificational variability effects with adverbials of frequency.

In the following two excursus, I will briefly discuss two reasons that make the interaction between adverbials of quantity and DP-like standard FRs hard to study. Although interesting, they are not crucial and the reader can skip them and move to the conclusions of this section in $\S$ 5.4.1.3.

### 5.4.1.2.1 EXCURSUS 1: Two requirements about the matrix clause: episodicity and subject position

The reason why I gave examples with only two wh-words in (12) and (13) is because two requirements have to be satisfied to make quantificational variability with adverbials of quantity more easily available: 1) the matrix clause must be episodic and 2) the DP-like standard $F R$ must be in the matrix subject position. I will discuss both requirements in turn.

The requirement for the matrix clause to be episodic has a plausible motivation: it prevents the adverbials from quantifying over events/situations. For instance, while (12a) above was not ambiguous, its habitual/generic counterpart in (14a) is: it can be paraphrased as in (14b) or (14c).
(14) a. [FR What I buy at yard sales] is por ôhe most part junk.
b. [op Mosi (of the) things I buy at yard sales] are junk.
c. Most of the time, [op the things I buy at yard sales] are junk.
(14b) and (14c) are not truth-conditionally equivalent. In a situation in which I have been to ten yard sales and at one of those everything I bought was really great, (14c) would be true, while (14b) would be false.

The requirement for the matrix clause to be episodic is problematic in English because, for reasons that are not clear to me, episodic sentences with a DP-like standard FR introduced by anything other than what in English are either degraded ((15a) vs. (15b)) or interpreted as denoting only one atomic entity (16). As I will discuss later, it is crucial in order for an adverbial of quantity to quantify over an expression that the expression denote a plural entity or any other complex entity that is made of parts (e.g. collective or mass nouns).
(15) a. Ilike [who you like].
b.?? In our first year in college, I liked [who you liked]. [good in the habitual reading!!]
(16) a. I really like [where he takes me out to dinner].
$=$ I really like the places he takes me out to dinner.
b. Ilike [where he has taken me out to dinner in the past few months].
$=$ I really like the place/\#the places he has taken me out to dinner in the past few months.

The second problematic requirement is the requirement for the DP-like standard FR to be in the matrix subject position. In (17), I move the DP-like standard FR in (12a) from the subject position to the position of complement of a verb (17a) or a preposition (17c) and the quantificational variability effects are not as easily available or are not available at all.
(17) a. For the most parE, I sent my mum [what I bought at the yard sale]. $\neq I$ sent my mum most of what I bought at the yard sale.
b. For the most part, I talked about [what I bought at the yard sale]. $\neq I$ talked about most of the things I bought at the yard sale.

This requirement is problematic because, in subject position, DP-like standard FRs introduced by who are unacceptable in English (no matter whether they are generic (18a) or episodic (18b)), while all the other DP-like standard FRs (except those with what) are interpreted as referring to only one atomic entity in an episodic contest ((19a) vs. (19b)).
(18) $\mathrm{a} .{ }^{*}$ [Who is a communist] certainly doesn't vote for Bush.
b. * [Who wrote this book] was put in jail for the rest of his life.
(19) a. Where he has taken me out to dinner in the past few months is really great.
b. = The place he has taken me out to dinner in the past few months is really great.
$\mathrm{b}^{\prime} . \neq$ The places he has taken me out to dinner in the past few months are really great.

Italian exhibits both kinds of restrictions with DP-like standard FRs introduced by the equivalents of where, when and how (remember that Italian does not allow FRs with the equivalent of what). As for DP-like standard FRs with chi 'who', they still need to occur in matrix subject position in order for quantificational variability to be easily detected, but they do not exhibit any constraint concerning episodicity. (20) shows that the Italian equivalents of the unacceptable English FRs in (18) are fully acceptable.
(20) a. [Chi è di sinistra] non vota certo a favore di Bush. who is of left not votes for-sure in favor of Bush 'Leftists don't vote for Bush for sure.'
b. [Chi ha scrito questo libro]fu messo in prigione per il resto della sua vita. who has written this book was put in jail for the rest of-the his life 'The person who wrote this book was put in jail for the rest of his life.'

### 5.4.1.2.2 EXCURSUS 2 : number morphology

DP-like standard FRs introduced by chi 'who' in Italian show quantificational variability with adverbials of quantity, unless the predicate in the FR or in the matrix clause is a morphologically singular adjective or noun. ${ }^{4}$ For instance, while (21a) is basically fully acceptable and exhibits quantificational variability (as shown by the translation), (21b) is severely degraded. The only difference between the two sentences is in the underlined predicate of the FR: if it is a PP and therefore does not show agreement with the wh-word in subject position, then the resulting sentence is acceptable (21a); if it is an agreeing adjective, the sentence is unacceptable (21b).
(21) a.(?) [Chi è di sinistra] ha in gran parte votato contro Berlusconi alle ultime elezioni. who is of left has in great part voted against B. at-the last elections 'Most leftists voted against Berlusconi in the last elections.'
b.?* [Chiè comunista] ha in gran parte votato contro Berlusconi alle ultime elezioni. who is communist.s has in great part voted against B. at-the last elections The contrast in (21) holds even if we switch the two predicates, so that now it is the underlined matrix predicate that exhibits the alternation between the agreeing adjectival form and the non-agreeing PP form (22).
(22) a.(?) [Chi ha votato contro Berlusconi alle ultime elezioni] era in gran parte di sinistra. who has voted against B . at-the last election was in great part of left 'Most people who voted against Berlusconi at the last elections were leftists.'
b.* [Chi ha votato contro Berlusconi alle ultime elezioni] era in gran parte comunista. who has voted against $B$. at-the last election was in great part comunist.S

Spanish gives further support to the observation that number morphology plays a crucial role, since it has two forms for 'who': quien, which is singular, and quienes,

[^52]which is plural. DP-like standard FRs with quien (23a) show the same restrictions with adverbials of quantity as the equivalents in ltalian (23c). Crucially, DP-like standard FRs with quienes do not exhibit any restrictions and pattern like plural definites (23b).
(23) a. ${ }^{*}$ [rR Quien es del sur] es en gran parte baio. Spanish who.s is of-the South is in great part short.S ('A person from the South is for the most part short.')
b. [FR Quienes son del sur] son en gran parte bajos. who. P are.3P of the south are3P in great part short.P 'Most people from the South are short.'
c.*[rrChi è di origini meridionali]è in gram parte basso. Italian who.s is of origins Southern is in great part short.s ('A person from Southern Italy is for the most part short.')

In Italian, if the predicate in the FR is collective (e.g. riunirsi 'gather') and the matrix predicate is a PP (e.g. in favore dello sciopero 'in favor of the strike'), then the FR exhibits quantificational variability as well:
(24)(?) [Chi si è riunito in assemblea] è in gran parte a favore dello sciopero. who CL is gathered.s in meeting is in great part in favor of-the strike 'Most people who are meeting are in favor of the strike.'

The reason why (24) is particularly interesting is that singular morphology does not seem to play the same role with verbal predicates. The past participle form riunito is morphologically singular, riuniti being the plural form, and it agrees with its morphologically singular subject chi. Nevertheless, intuitions are clear that the FR denotes a plural individual, since one single person cannot gather. Similarly, both the verbal predicate and the copula in (21a) and (22a) agree in singular number with their subject chi, nevertheless the sentences are acceptable and exhibit quantificational variability.

A tentative conclusion could be that there are verbal and PP predicates that are inherently collective (i.e. they can denote a set with only plural entities) or mixed (i.e. they can denote a set with both plural and atomic individuals), regardless of their number morphology or without any number morphology at all. On the other hand, singular adjectival or nominal predicates can be only distributive (i.e. they denote a set with only atomic entities) and need plural morphology to add plural entities to their denotation.

### 5.4.1.3 Conclusions on quantificational variability in DP-like standard FRs

As summarized in Table 2, DP-like standard FRs pattern like definites, generic bare plurals and generic indefinites with respect to quantificational variability effects under adverbs of frequency, while they pattern like definites and generic bare plurals with respect to adverbials of quantity.

Table 2. Quantification variability effects in DP-like standard FRs

|  | Adverbials of frequency | Adverbials of quantity |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| DP-like standard FRs | YES | YES |
|  | = definites | $=$ definites |
|  | = generic bare plurals | = generic bare plurals |
|  | = generic indefinites | $\neq$ generic indefinites |
|  | $\neq$ universals | $\neq$ universals |
|  | $\neq$ non-generic bare plurals | $\neq$ non-generic bare plurals |
|  | $\neq$ non-generic indefinite | $\neq$ non-generic indefinite |

In conclusion, the behavior of DP-like standard FRs under adverbials of quantification is the same as that of definites and generic bare plurals. This is the same conclusion we reached in Chapter 2 on completely independent grounds.

### 5.4.2. Existential FRs

In Chapter 3, we concluded that existential FRs semantically behave like (existentially) quantified expressions. If this conclusion is correct, we expect existential FRs to behave like other (existentially) quantified expressions also as far as their interaction with adverbials of quantification is concerned. This predication is borne out. Existential FRs never exhibit quantificational variability. When they occur with adverbials of frequency their quantificational force is never modified by the adverbials, but it is always the existential force (25).
(25) adverbials of frequency
a. Spesso ho [ con chi parlare] quando sono triste. Italian
often have.1s with who speak.INF when am sad
'I often have somebody to talk to when I am sad.'
\# 'I have many people to talk to when I am sad.'
b. Spesso non ha [di che parlare alle conferenze]. often not has of what talk.InF to-the conferences 'He often doesn't have anything to say at conferences.' $\not{ }^{\prime}$ 'He doesn't have many things to say at conferences.'
c. Spesso non avevo [dove nascondermi] in caso di pericolo. often not had. Is where hide.INF in case of danger 'Often I didn't have a place where I could hide in case of danger.' $\neq$ 'I didn't have many places where I could hide in case of danger.'

It follows from the data in (25) and Generalization 1 in (7) that existential FRs cannot be definites, or generic indefinites, or generic bare plurals; whereas their behavior is compatible with them being universally quantified expressions, non-generic bare plurals and non-generic indefinites.

When existential FRs occur with adverbials of quantity the result is just uninterpretable
(26).
(26) adverbials of quantity
a.\# In gran parte ho [ con chi parlare] quando sono triste. Italian
in great part have. IS with who speak. NF when am sad
("For the most part, I have somebody to talk to when I am sad.")
b.\#1n parte non ha [diche parlare alle conferenze].
in part not has of what talk.INF to-the conferences
(Partly, he doesn't have anything to say at the conferences.')
c.\#In minima parte non avevo [dove nascondermi] in caso di pericolo.
in very-little part not had. Is where hide.INF in case of danger
('To a small extent, I didn't have a place where I could hide in case of danger.')

It follows from the data in (26) and Generalization 2 in (7) that existential FRs cannot be definites or generic bare plurals. Their behavior under adverbials of quantity would be compatible with them being universally quantified expressions, non-generic bare plurals, non-generic indefinites or generic indefinites. But the last option has already been ruled out by the data in (25) and Generalization 1.

In conclusion, the quantificational variability behavior of existential FRs under adverbials of quantification (cf. table 3) shows that existential FRs behave like quantified expressions. In fact, what universally quantified DPs, non-generic bare plurals and non-generic indefinites have in common is that they all involve some quantification, either of the universal or existential type (for non-generic bare plurals and indefinites). This is fully compatible with our analysis in Chapter 3, according to which existential FR are always existentially quantified.

Table 3. Quantificational variability effects in existential FRs

|  | Adverbials of rrequency | Adverbials of quantity |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Rxistentig 1 RRs | ```NO = universals \(=\) non-generic bare plurals = non-gemeric indefinite \(\neq\) generic indefinites \(\neq\) definites \(\neq\) generic bare plurals``` | ```NO = universals \(=\) non-generic bare plurals \(=\) non-generic indefinite \(=\) generic indelinites \(\neq\) definites \(\neq\) generic bare plurals``` |

### 5.4.3. -ever FRs

-ever FRs do not exhibit quantificational variability. When they occur with adverbials of frequency, their quantificational force is never modified by the adverbials. Sometimes the results are even uninterpretable. This is shown in (27) for Italian and (28) for English. Each of the -ever FRs in (27)-(28) is paired with the sentence resulting from replacing the -ever FR with the quantified DP that would be expected to roughly paraphrase it, if the adverbial of frequency could quantify over the -ever FR.
(27) a. Chissà perché, ma [rr chiunque è di origini meridionali] (\#raramente) è alto. who-knows why but whoever is of origins Southern rarely is tall.M.S 'I don't know why but whoever is from Southern Italy is (rarely) tall.'
$\neq[\mathrm{dp}$ Few people from Southern Italy] are tall.
b. Chissà perché, ma [fr qualunque libro compro] è (\#spesso) una schifezza. who-knows why but whatever book buy.is is often a junk 'I don't why, but whatever book I buy is (often) junk.' $\neq$ [pp Many/most books I buy] are junk.
c. (\#A volte) le piaceva [FR dovunque ci fossero le montagne]. at times to-her.CL pleased.IMPERF. 3 s everywhere there be.SUBJ.IMPERF the mountains '(Sometimes) she liked wherever there were mountains.' $\neq$ She liked [Dp some places where there were mountains].
(28) a. [re Whoever comes from Southern Italy] is rarely tall.
$\neq[$ Dp Few people from Southern Italy] are tall.
b. [rr Whatever you find at a yard sale] is oftem junk.
$\neq$ [DP Many things you find at a yard sale] are junk.
c. I rarely like [fr wherever he takes me to dinner]. $\neq$ I like [op few places he takes me to dinner].
d. I often hate [FR whenever you yell like that]. $\neq I$ hate [op many occasions when you yell like that].
e. [FR However she dresses] is often very original. $\neq[\mathrm{DP}$ Many ways she dresses $]$ are very original.

It follows from the data in (27)-(28) and Generalization 1 in (7) that -ever FRs cannot be definites, or generic indefinites, or generic bare plurals, whereas their behavior is compatible with them being universally quantified expressions, non-generic bare plurals or non-generic indefinites.

When -ever FRs occur with adverbials of quantity their quantificational force is never modified by the adverbials (29).
(29) a. [FR Chiunque è di origini meridionali] è (\#in parte) alto. whoever is of origins Southern is in part tall.M.S
'Whoever is from Southern Italy is (in part) tall.'
$\neq$ [op Some people from Southern Italy] are tall.
b. [FR Qualunque libro compro] è (\#im gran parte) costoso. whatever book buy.is is ingreat part expensive
'Whatever book I buy is (for the most part) expensive.'
$\neq[\mathrm{Dp}$ Mamy/most books I buy] are expensive.
c. (Hitiparte)le piaceva [FR dovunque ci fossero le montagne]. in part to-her.CL pleased.mPERF. 3 S everywhere there be.SUBJ.IMPERF the mountains '(To some extent), she liked wherever there were mountains.'
$\neq$ She liked [opsome places where there were mountains].
(30) a. [rR Whoever comes from Southern Italy] is (\#for the most part) tall. $\neq[\mathrm{DP}$ Most people from Southern Italy] are tall.
b. [rR Whatever clothes you find at a yard sale] are (\#for the most part) cheap. $\neq$ [ DP Most clothes you find at a yard sale] are cheap.
c. [rR Wherever he takes me to dinner] is (Hfor the most part) fabulous. $\neq$ [Dp Most places he takes me to dinner] are fabulous.
d. [FR However she dresses] is (\#to some extent) very original. $\neq$ [pp Some ways she dresses] are very original.

It follows from the data in (29)-(30) and Generalization 2 in (7) that -ever FRs cannot be definites or generic bare plurals. Their behavior under adverbials of quantity would be compatible with them being universally quantified expressions, non-generic bare plurals, non-generic indefinites and generic indefinites. But the last option has already been ruled out by the data in (27)-(28) and Generalization 1 in (7).

In conclusion, similarly to what we concluded about existential FRs, the quantificational variability behavior of ever FRs under adverbials of quantification (cf. table 4) shows that -ever FRs behave like quantified expressions. This is compatible with our discussion of ever FRs in Chapter 4. In particular, it shows that an analysis of -ever FRs as modalized definites à la Dayal (1997) would not have a direct way to account for the data in (29)-(30), since plural definites are fully compatible with adverbials of quantity, while ever FRs are not (cf. Chapter 4).

Table 4. Quantificational variability effects in -ever FRs

|  | Adverbials of frequency | Adverbials of quantity |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| -ever HRS | ```NO \(=\) universals \(=\) mon-generic bare plurals \(=\) mon-generic inde minite \(\neq\) generic indefinites \(\neq\) definites \(\neq\) generic bare plurals``` | ```NO = universals = mon-generic bare plurals = non-generic indefimite = generic indelimites #definites #generic bare plurals``` |

### 5.5. Conclusion

In this chapter, I showed that, while existential FRs and eever FRs do not exhibit quantificational variability effects under adverbials of quantification, DP-like standard FRs do. Looking at what kinds of DPs can occur with adverbials of quantification, I conclude that DP-like standard FRs pattern like plural definites and generic bare plurals, while existential FRs and -ever FRs pattern like quantified expressions. These conclusions are consistent with and give further support to the analyses and/or generalizations in Chapters 2-4.

Table 5. Quantificational variability effects in FRs and DP

|  | Adverbials of frequency | Adverbials of quantity |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :---: |
| DP-like standard FRs (\$5.4.1) | YES | YES |  |
| existential FRs ( $\$ 5.4 .2$ ) | NO | NO |  |
| -ever FRs $(\$ 5.4 .3)$ | NO | NO |  |
|  |  |  |  |
| Definite DPs | YES | YES |  |
| Generic bare plural DPs | YES | YES |  |
| Generic indefinite DPs | YES | NO |  |
| Non-generic bare plural DPs | NO | NO |  |
| Non-generic indefinite DPs | NO | NO |  |
| Universally quantified DPs | NO | NO |  |

## CHAPTER 6

## A quick look at wh-interrogatives

In this brief last chapter, I will sketch how the conclusions about the semantic contributions of phrasal wh-words in FRs from the previous chapters can be applied to the most common and studied case of wh-constructions, i.e. wh-interrogatives (wh-INTs).

A discussion of the different semantic analyses that have been suggested for wh-interrogatives falls largely beyond the constraints of the present work. Therefore I will concentrate only on how my conclusions about wh-words can be applied to a very popular account for the semantic contribution of wh-INTs, namely the one in Karttunen (1977). I will just assume this proposal, without discussing its pros and cons. In what follows, I will assume some details of Heim's (2001) extremely clear presentation of Kartunen's proposal.

According to Karttunen (1977), wh-INTs denote a set of propositions. More precisely, they denote the set of propositions that jointly constitute a complete and true answer to the wh-INT. For instance, what Adam liked in Jie knew what Adam liked denotes a set of propositions of the kind 'Adam liked Korean food', 'Adam liked Japanese movies', 'Adam liked Hungarian music', etc. A concise more formal way to express this is given in (1) ( $p$ is a variable over propositions).
(1) $[$ wh-NT what Adam liked $] \rightarrow \lambda p \exists x\left[{ }^{\vee} p \wedge p=\wedge\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.(x) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}(x)(a)\right]\right]$

According to (1), the wh-INT what Adam liked translates into a logical form that denotes a set of propositions that are true in the actual world and that are equivalent to the
proposition that there is an inanimate entity that Adam liked. Kartunnen's original proposal actually ignores the restrictions that distinguish who, what, where, when, and how. In (1), I have introduced the inanimate restriction to distinguish what from the other wh-words, similarly to what I have done from Chapter 2 on.

As made explicit in (1), Karttunen's analysis assumes wh-phrases in wh-INTs to behave semantically like existentially quantified expressions. On the other hand, we saw in the previous chapters that wh-phrases in FRs cannot be assigned any quantificational force. Karttunen would assign the phrasal wh-word what a logical form like the one in (2), while the one we assigned to what in Chapter 2 is repeated in (3). The only crucial difference between the two formulas is in the boxed elements: an existential quantifier in Kartunen's (2), a $\lambda$-abstractor in mine (3). This is true for all the other phrasal wh-words that can occur both in wh-INTs and FRs.
(2) According to Karttunen
what $\rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X}_{\ll, r}$ 日 $\mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{ce}}[$ [inanimate $(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]$
(3) My proposal
what $\rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X}_{<\mathrm{e}, \mathrm{t}}$ 国 $\mathrm{x}_{\ll>}[$ inanimate $(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})$ ]
If we want to maintain Kartunen's semantics for interrogatives (i.e. interrogatives as set-of-proposition-denoting expressions) without assuming that wh-words in wh-INTs have a different lexical meaning from wh-words in FRs, the existential quantification over the variable introduced by the wh-trace in (1) can no longer be triggered by the lexical meaning of wh-words, as in (2). In order to deal with this problem, I will make use of two further covert elements: $\exists$ and ?. They are just my own version of two stipulations that are already in Karttunen's proposal, as will become clear soon. I will
illustrate my proposal with the sample derivation in (4)-(5). Comments follow.
(4) a. Jie knew what Adam liked.
b. $\quad \mathbb{I P}_{2}$

 what ${ }_{1}$


1

(5) Logical form of the wh-INT in (4)

1. liked $\rightarrow \lambda \times \lambda y[$ like' $(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{y})]$
2. $\mathrm{t}_{1} \rightarrow \mathrm{X}_{1}$
3. Adam $\rightarrow$ a
4. what ${ }_{1} \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{x}_{1}}\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.{ }^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)\right]$
5. $\left[v \mathrm{v}\right.$ liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x} \lambda \mathrm{y}\left[\mathrm{like}{ }^{\prime}(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{y})\right]\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \equiv \lambda y\left[\mathrm{like}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{y})\right]$
6. $\left[\mathrm{r}\right.$ liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda y\left[\mathrm{like}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{y})\right]$
7. $\left[\right.$ ip Adam like $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{y}\left[\mathrm{like}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{y})\right](\mathrm{a}) \equiv$ like $^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})$
8. $\left[c^{\prime} \lambda_{1}\right.$ Adam liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.$ like $\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})\right]$
9. $\left[\mathrm{CPI}\right.$ what ${\left.\text { A Adam liked } \mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}[\text { inanimate }}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \mathrm{X}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)]\left(\lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.\right.$ like $\left.\left.\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathfrak{a})\right]\right)$
$\equiv \lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.{ }^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right) \wedge \lambda x_{1}\left[l i k e^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right)(a)\right]\left(x_{1}\right)\right] \equiv \lambda x_{1}\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left(x_{1}\right) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right)(a)\right]$
10. $\exists \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \exists \mathrm{x}[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]$
11. $\left[\mathrm{CP} 2 \exists\right.$ what Adam liked $\left.\mathrm{t}_{1}\right] \rightarrow \lambda \mathrm{X} \exists \mathrm{x}[\mathrm{X}(\mathrm{x})]\left(\lambda \mathrm{x}_{1}\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{x}_{1}\right)(\mathrm{a})\right]\right)$ $\equiv \exists \mathrm{x}\left[\right.$ inanimate $\left.^{\prime}(\mathrm{x}) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}(\mathrm{x})(\mathrm{a})\right]$
12. $? \rightarrow \lambda p_{1} \lambda p_{2}\left[{ }^{\vee}{ }^{2} \wedge p_{2}=p_{1}\right]$
 $\equiv \lambda p_{2}\left[{ }^{`}{ }^{2}{ }_{2} \wedge p_{2}=\wedge \exists x\left[\right.\right.$ inanimate $\left.\left.(x) \wedge \operatorname{like}^{\prime}(x)(a)\right]\right]$

I divided the semantic derivation in (4)-(5) above into four steps. Step 1 and Step 2 are
the same as the ones of the identical FR in Chapter 2 ex. ??. Therefore, I will not comment on them and I will just refer the reader to the discussion in Chapter 2. Here I will concentrate on Step 3 and Step 4 .

STEP 3: $\mathrm{CP}_{2}$ level. I assume that a covert element $\exists$ is adjoined to $\mathrm{CP}_{1}$, the CP that contains the wh-phrase. The semantic contribution of $\exists$ is that of existentially closing the set denoted by $\mathrm{CP}_{1}(5.10)$. It follows that $\mathrm{CP}_{2}$ translates into exactly the same existentially quantified formula as the one in Karttunen's analysis (cf. (5.11) and the left-most part of the formula in (1)).

STEP 4: ForceP Ievel. I also assume a covert element? to be the head of a Force Phrase (ForceP). Its semantic contribution is to turn a proposition into a set of true propositions (cf. (5.12)). It is easy to see that the result is the same as Karttunen's analysis: a wh-INT ends up denoting a set of propositions (cf. (5.13) and (1)).

This analysis may look stipulative and not very elegant. Nevertheless, it uses exactly the same ingredients as Kartunen's and it has at least one empirical advantage. ? is almost the same as Karttunen's ?, the only difference being its syntactic position. ? is located in C in Karttunen's analysis, while I assume it to be the head of the highest clausal projection ForceP. In both accounts, ? is licensed only in wh-INTs because of their interrogative force. Therefore, ? can never occur in FRs.
$\exists$ replaces Karttunen's assumption that wh-phrases behave as existentially quantified expressions. In my analysis, it is $\exists$ and not the wh-phrase that triggers existential closure. What I need to assume is that $\exists$ is only licensed in a clause whose ForceP has interrogative force, in order not to allow $\exists$ to occur in FRs as well, in particular DP-like
standard FRs. This move has the advantage that we are no longer forced to conclude that wh-words in wh-INTs and FRs have different meaning.

Unike FRs, wh-INTs can contain more than one wh-phrase. Therefore, Step 2 and Step 3 can be reiterated. In other words, a wh-INT will have as many $\mathrm{CP}_{1} \mathrm{~s}$ and $\mathrm{CP}_{2}$ s as wh-phrases.

In conclusion, my implementation of Kartunen's proposal is very close to the original one, but it has the advantage that assumes a semantic contribution for wh-words that can account for both wh-INTs and FRs.

## CONCLUSION

What is the semantic contribution of phrasal wh-words like who, what, where, when, how, and their equivalents across languages? The present work was an attempt to answer this not-so-unusual question in an unusual way. What we concluded by looking at the semantic behavior of FRs cross-linguistically is that the semantic contribution of wh-words is the one of restricting a set: they apply to a set and return one of its subsets. The set that wh-words apply to always results from $\lambda$-abstracting over the variable that is introduced in the logical representation by the wh-trace. For instance, what in Jie ate [what Adam liked t ] applies to the set of entities that Adam liked and returns the subset of inanimate entities that Adam liked. The set of things that Adam liked results from $\lambda$-abstracting over the variable introduced by the wh-trace $t$.

Three main conclusions were reached in the present work. First, FRs are cross-linguistically attested and their semantic behavior is very similar across languages. Therefore, by studying them, we can reliably draw conclusions about some general aspects of language, in particular wh-words. Second, the semantic contribution of phrasal wh-words like who, what, where, when, how, and their equivalents across languages is the one of restricting a set. Third, maximality can be used by languages as a default strategy to overcome type-mismatch and does not need to be incorporated into the meaning of an overt lexical element. I suggested that there is a principled reason why maximality is made used of rather then any other strategy, for instance quantification: it is the best information-preserving strategy from going to a set of entities to an entity.

## Appendix

## TREE RELATIVES: CROSSLINGUISTIC DATA

## Indoevropean: Romance

## Catalan

(1) who
a. Digue'm [wh-INT qui/ *que treballa dur]. tell-me who/* that compl works hard 'Tell me who works hard.'
b. Admiro [ $\mathrm{Fr} q u i /$ "que treballa dur]. admire. 1SG who/*that comp. works hard 'I admire those who work hard.'
c. Admiro la gent [HR *qui/que treballa dur] admire. ISG the people *wholthat ${ }_{\text {compl }}$ work.3PL hard 'I admire people who work hard.'
(2) what
a. Digue'm $\left[\right.$ wh- ${ }^{\mathrm{NT} T}$ què $/ *$ que has cuinat $] .{ }^{1}$ tell-me what/* that $_{\text {compl }}$ have. 2 SG cooked 'Tell me what you cooked.'
b. He tastat [FR *què/*que has cuinat]. ${ }^{2}$ have.1SG tasted *what/*that cowpl have. 2SG cooked
c. He tastat el menjar [*què/que has cuinat]. have. 1 sG tasted the food *what/that ${ }_{\text {compl }}$ have. 2 SG cooked 'I tasted the food you cooked.'
${ }^{1}$ The spelling difference between què and que corresponds to an actual phonetic difference: [ke] 'què' vs. [ka] 'que'.
${ }^{2}$ Catalan does not have FRs introduced by què 'what'. The English sentence I tasted what you cooked would be translated as follows:
(3) where
a. No sé [wh-NTon van néizer els meus pares]. not know. 1 SG where AUX.3pL be-born the my parents 'I don't know where my parents were born.'
b. Vaig néixer [FR on els meus pares van néixer]. AUX. ISG be-bom where the my parents AUX. 3PL be-born 'I was born where my parents were born.'
c. Vaig néixer a laciutat [hr on els meus pares van néixer]. AUX. 1SG be-bom in the town where the my parents AUX. 3PL be-bom 'I was born in the town where my parents were borm.'
(4) when
a. The preguntat[wa-INT quan/*en què va arribarla Maria]. to-you-have.1SG asked when/*in that ${ }_{\text {compl }}$ AUX. 3 SG arrive the Maria ${ }^{\text {'I }}$ I asked you when Maria arrived.'
b. Me'n vaig anar[fr quan/*en què la Maria va arribar]. me-CL AUX.1sG go when/*in that ${ }_{\text {Compl }}$ the Maria AUX.3SG arrive 'I left when Maria arrived.'
c. Me'n vaig anar en el moment [hr ?*quan/en què la Maria va arribar]. me-CL AUX. 1 SG go in the moment $?^{*}$ when/in that ${ }_{\mathrm{compL}}$ the Maria AUX. 3 SG arrive 'I left at the moment when Maria arrived.'
(i) He tastat això /el [HR que has cuinat].
have. Is tasted this.DEM.N/the.M.S that have. 2 SG cooked
'I tasted what you cooked.'
The bracketed string in (i) is not a FR according to our definition, since it is not introduced by a wh-word nor can it be replaced with a DP or PP.
(5) how
a. Digue'm [wh-INT com/"que ho vas fer]. ${ }^{3}$
tell-me how/*that compl it AUX. 2 SG do
'Tell me how you did it.'
b. Ho vaig fer [FR com $/ *$ que ho vas fer tu].
it AUX. 1 SG do how/*that compl it AUX. 2 SG do you
'I did it how you did it.'
c. Ho vaig fer de la mateixa manera [hr ?com/que ho vas fertu].
it AUX. 1 sG do of the same way ?how/thatcompi it AUX. 2 SG do you
'I did it in the (same) way you did it.'
(6) why
a. Digue'm [whint perquè ho vas fer].
tell-me why it AUX.2SGdo
'Tell me why you did it.'
b. Ho vaig fer [? perquè ho vas fer tu].
it AUX. $15 G$ do why it AUX.2SG do you
'I did it because you did it.'
(This can never mean: 'I did it for the same reason you did it.')
c. Ho vaig fer pel mateix motiu [hr perquè ho vas fer tu]. it AUX.1sG do for-the same reason why it AUX. 2 SG do you
'I did it for the same reason you did it.'

| Catalan | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{2}$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $?$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |

[^53]
## French

(7) who
a. Dis moi [wh-nt qui travaille dur]. tell me who works hard 'Tell me who works hard.'
b.(?) J'admire [FR qui travaille dur]. I-admire who works hard 'I admire those who work hard.'
c. J'admire les gens [HR qui travaillent dur].

I-admire the people who work.3P hard
'I admire (the) people who work hard.'
(8) what
a. Dis moi [wh-INTe que/ *que tu as cuit]. tell me that COMP/ *COMP you have.2s cooked 'Tell me what you cooked.'
b. J'ai goute [frce que/ *que tu as cuit]. I-have tasted that COMP/ *COMP you have. 2 S cooked 'I tasted what you cooked.'
c. J'ai goute la nourriture [hr ce que/ *que tu as cuit]. I-have tasted the food that COMP/ *COMP you have.2s cooked 'I tasted the food you cooked.'
(9) where
a. Je ne sais pas [wh-Nin où mes parents sont nés]. I not know not where my parents are born 'I don't know where my parents were born.'
b. Je suis né [Fr où mes parents sont nés].

I am born where my parents are born
'I was born where my parents are born.'
c. Je suis né dans la ville [hr où mesparents sont nés]. I am born in the town where my parents are born 'I was born in the same town where my parents were born.'
(10) when
a. Je t'ai demandé [wh-nt quand/*où Marie est arrivée].

I you.cl.DAT-have.1s asked when/ *REL Marie is arrived
'I asked you when Marie arrived.'
b. Je suis parti [rr quand/*où Marie est arrivée].

I am left when *rel Marie is arrived
'I left when Marie arrived.'
c. Je suis parti au moment [hr *quand/ où Marie est arrivée].

I am left at-the moment *when/ ReL Marie is arrived
'I left at the moment Marie arrived.'
(11) how
a. Dis moi $[$ wh-INT comment/ *comme / *dont/*que tu l'as fait $]$. tell me how ${ }_{\text {INT }}$ / ${ }^{\text {mow }}$ /r/ *REL/*COMP you it.CL-have.2S done 'Tell me how you did it.'
b. Je l'ai fait [FR *comment/ comme/*dont/*que tu l'as fait].

I it.CL-have.1s done *how ${ }_{\text {INT }} /$ how $_{\text {FR }} /$ *REL/*COMP you it.CL-have.2S done
'I did it how you did it.'
c. Je l'ai fait de la facon [rr *comment/* comme / dont/ que tu

I it.CL-have.1s done of the way *howint/ *how ${ }^{\text {FR }} /$ REL/ COMP you
l'as fait].
it.CL-have. 2 s done
'I did it in the (same) way you did it.'
(12) why
a. Dis moi [wh-NT pourquoi tu l'as fait].

Tell me why you it.Cl-have. 2 S done
'Tell me why you did it.'
b. * Je l'ai fait [fr pourquoi tu l'as fait].

I it.CL have. 1s why you it.CL-have. 2 s done
('I did it why you did it.')
c. *Je l'ai fait pour la raison [hr pourquoi tu l'as fait].

I it.cl have.1s the reason why you it.CL-have. 2 s done ('I did it for the same reason why you did it.')

| French | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Wh-INTs | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ |
| FRs | ? | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | * | * |
| HRs | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | $\checkmark$ | * | * | * |

## Spanish

General comments. Spanish distinguishes orthographically between wh-words in wh-INTs and FRs.
(13) who
a. Pregunté [wh-INT quiém /*quien /*que trabaja duro]. asked.1s $\quad$ who $_{\text {INT }} / *$ who $_{\mathrm{FR}} / *$ COMP works hard.
'I asked who works hard.'
b. Admiro a [rR *quién/quien/*que trabaja duro]. admire.1s to ${ }^{*}$ who $_{\text {INT }} /$ who $_{\text {FR }} / *$ COMP works hard 'I admire those who work hard.'
c. Admiro (a) la gente [нr *quién/*quien/que ${ }^{4}$ trabaja duro]. admire. 1s (to) the people *whorint who $\mathrm{OR}_{\mathrm{FR}} /$ COMP work. 3 P hard.
'I admire people who work hard.'
(14) what
a. Pregunté [wh-NT qué /*que /lo que ${ }^{5}$ cocinaste].
asked.1s what/*COMP/the.N.S COMP cooked. 2 S
'I asked what you cooked.'
b. Comí [*qué /*que /lo que cocinaste]. ${ }^{6}$
ate. 1s *what/*COMP/the.N.S COMP cooked. 2 s
'I ate what you cooked.'
c. Comí la comida [hr *qué /que /*lo que cocinaste]. ate.1s the food $\quad$ what/COMP/* the.N.S COMP cooked.2s 'I ate the food you cooked.'

[^54](15) where
a. No sé [wh-INT donde /\%donde nacieron mispadres]. not know. IS where ${ }_{\mathrm{INT}} / *$ where $_{\mathrm{Fr}}$ were-bom. 3 P my parents 'I don't know where my parents where born.'
b. Nací [FR *dónde /donde nacieron mis padres]. was-bom. 1 s *where $_{\text {INT }} /$ where $_{\text {RF }}$ were-born.3p my parents 'I was born where my parents were born.'
c. Nací en la misma ciudad [hr *dónte /donde nacieron mis padres]. was-bom. 1 S in the same town *where $_{\mathrm{INT}} /$ where $_{\mathrm{FR}}$ were-bom. 3 P my parents 'I was born in the same town where my parents where borm.'
(16) when
a. Te pregunté [wh-INT cuándo/*en que llegaba María]. to-you asked.1S when ${ }_{\text {INT }} / *$ in COMP/RP arrived. 3 S Maria 'I asked you when Maria arrived.'
$a^{\prime}$. Te pregunté [rr cuando llegaba Maria] to-you asked. 1 S when FR arrived. 3 S Maria 'I asked you a question when/at the time that Maria arrived.'
b. Me fui [FR *cuándo/cuando/*en que María llegó].
CL.REFL. IS left. IS * when $_{\text {INT }} /$ when $_{\mathrm{FR}} / *$ in COMP/RP Maria arrived. 3 S 'I left when Maria arrived.'
c. Me fui en el momento [ HR *cuảndo/ ?*cuando/en que ${ }^{7}$ Maríallegó]. CL.REFL. 1 s left. 1 s in the moment $\quad$ when $_{\mathrm{INT}} / ?^{*}$ when $_{\mathrm{FR}} / \mathrm{in}$ COMP/RP Maria arrived. 3 S 'I left at the (same) time that Maria arrived.'
(17) how
a. Dime [wh-INT córmo $/ *$ como lo hiciste]. tell-me how ${ }_{\text {INT }} /$ how $_{\text {FR }}$ it.CL did.2S
'Tell me how you did it.'
b. Lo hice [rr *cómo /como tú lo hiciste].
it.CL did.1s *how ${ }_{\text {INT }}$ /how FR $^{\text {you it.CL did. } 2 \mathrm{~S}}$
'I did it how you did it.'
c. Lohice de la mismamanera [hr *cómo / ?como/er que tú lo hiciste].
it.CL did. 1 S of the same way $\quad$ how $_{\mathrm{INT}} /$ ?how $_{\mathrm{FR}} /$ /in COMP/RP you it.CL did. 2 S
'I did it in the same way you did it.'

[^55](18) why
a. Pregunté [wh-int por qué /*por lo que $/ *$ que lo hiciste]. asked. is for what/*for the.N.S COMP/*COMP it.CL did. 2 S
'Tell me why you did it.'
b. Lo hice [*por qué/porlo que $/ *$ que tü lo hiciste]. ${ }^{8}$
it.CL did. 1 S * for what/for the.N.S COMP/*COMP you it.CL did. 2 S
'I did it for the same reason why you did it.'
c. Lo hice por la mismarazón [hr *por qué/*porlo que /que ú lo hiciste]. it.CL did. 1 s for the same reason *for what/*for the.N.S COMP/COMP you it.CL did. 2 S 'I did for the same reason why you did it."

| Spanish | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{2}$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{*}$ | $?^{*}$ | $?$ | $*$ |

## INDOEUROPEAN: GERMANIC

## German

General comments. German has two series of elements that introduce HRs. One is homophonous with the definite article die 'the', the other with the wh-determiner welche (welche/r/s/n/m) 'which'. All the examples of HRs below are introduced by an element of the die series, which has been glossed "RP". Unless otherwise noted, the corresponding element of the welche series can be used as well.

The die series can never introduce FRs or wh-INTs. The welche series can never introduce FRs, while it can introduce wh-NTs only when the wh-word is combined with

[^56]an NP or understood elliptically. ${ }^{9}$
(19) who
a. Sag mir, [wh-NT wen du magst].
say me who.ACC you like
'Tell me who you like.'
b. [FR Wen du magst] mag ich nicht.
who.ACC you like like I not
'I don't like the people you like.'
c. Ichmag die Leute nicht, [hr *wen/ die dumagst].

I like the people not *who.ACC/RP.ACC.P you like
'I don't like the people you like'.
(20) what
a. Sag mir, [wh-NTT was du gekocht hast].

Tell me what you cooked have
'Tell me what you cooked.'
b. Ich habe probiert, [FR was du gekocht hast]. ${ }^{10}$

I have tried, what you cooked have.
'I tasted what you cooked.'
c. Ich habe das Essen, [hr ?was/das du gekocht hast, probiert].

I have the food ?what/RP.ACC.N.S you cooked have, tried
'I tasted the food you cooked.'
${ }^{9}$ Some examples to illustrate this point:
(i) Sag mir welcher ??(Mann) hart arbeitet.
'Tell me which ??(man) works hard.'
(ii) Finde heraus, wo die Männer sind, und welcher hart arbeitet.
'Find out where the men are and which $\qquad$ hard works.'
${ }^{10}$ One of my consultants has a slight preference for the FR to be preposed in a contest like this with a roughly contrastive meaning, presumably because NP extraposition is banned his dialect:
(i) [rR Was du gekocht hast], habe ich probiert.
(21) where
a. Ich weiss nicht, [wh-INT wo meine Eltern geboren sind].

I don't know where my parents born are
'I don't know where my parents were born.'
b. Ich bin geboren, [FR wo meine Eltern geboren sind].

I amborn wheremy parents born are
'I was born where my parents were born.'
c. Ich bin in derselben Stadt geboren, $\left[\mathrm{HR}\right.$ ? $\mathrm{wO}^{11} /$ in der meine Eltem geboren sind].

I am in the-same city born where/ in RP.DAT.F.S my parents born are
'I was born in the town where my parents were born.'
(22) when
a. Ich habe dich gefragt, [wh-NT wamin Maria angekommen ist].

I have you.ACC asked, when Maria arrived is 'I asked you when Maria arrived.'
b. Ich bin gegangen, [wh-INT *wamn/als ${ }^{12}$ Maria angekommen ist].

I am left *when/when.CONJ Maria arrived is
'Ileft when Maria arrived,'
c. Ich bin in dem Moment gegangen, [HR *wamn/?als /in dem Maria angekommen ist].

I am in the moment left *when/when.CONI/in RP.DAT Maria arrived is
'I left at the moment when Maria arrived.'
(23) how
a. Sag mir, [wh-1NT wie du es gemacht hast].
say me.DAT how you it made have
'Tell me how you did it.'
b. Ich habe es (so) gemacht, [re wie du (es getan hast)]. ${ }^{13}$

I have it so made how/as you (it made have)
'I did it how you did it.'
c. Ich habe es auf dieselbe (Art und) Weise gemacht, [hr wie du (es getan hast)].

I have it on the-same (kind and) way made how/as you (it made have)
I did it in the same way you did it.'

[^57](24) why
a. Sag mir, [wh-INT warume /weswegen du es getan hast]. say me why/ because-of-what you it done have 'Tell me why you did it.'
b. Ich habe es getan [fr *warum/*wesweyen du es getan hast].

I have it done *why/ *because-of-what you it done have
c. Ich habe es aus demselben Grund getan, \%warmmin ${ }^{14} /$ wweswegen/ aus dem $^{\text {w }}$ / I have it out-of the-same reason done, \%why/ *because-of-what/ out-of RP.DAT du es getan hast].
you it done have
'I did it for the same reason why you did it.'

| Germam | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $?$ | $\sqrt{*}$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\%$ |

## Dutch

General comments. Like German, Dutch uses wh-words to form wh-INTs and FRs, and a morphologically unrelated series, which look like demonstratives, to form HRs.
(25) who
a. Vertel me [wh-INT wie er hard werkt]. ${ }^{15}$ tell me who there hard works 'Tell me who works hard.'
b. Ik bewonder [FR wie hard werkt].

I admire who hard works
${ }^{\text {'I I }}$ admire who works hard.
c. Ik bewonder (de) mensen [HR *wie/die hard werken]. I admire (the) people who/RP hard work
'I admire (the) people who work hard.'

[^58](26) what
a. Vertel me [whrint wat jij gekookt hebt].
tell me what you cooked have.
'Tell me what you cooked,'
b. Ik proefde [rr wat jif gekookt had].

I tasted what you cooked had
'I tasted what you cooked.'
c. Ik proefde het eten [HR \%wat ${ }^{16} / \mathrm{dat}$ jij gekookt had].

I tasted the food \%what/RP you cooked had
'I tasted the food you cooked.'
(27) where
a. Ik weet niet [wh-NT waar mijn ouders geboren zijn].

I know not where my parents born are
"I don't know where my parents were born.'
b. Ik ben geboren [FR waar mijn ouders geboren zijn].

I am born where my parents bom are
'I was born where my parents were born.'
c. Ik ben geboren in de stad [HR waar mijn ouders (ook) geboren zijn].

1 am born in the city where my parents (too) born are
'I was born in the town where my parents where born.'
(28) when
a. Ik vroeg je [wh-nt wanneer/*toen Maria aankwam].

I asked you when $/ *$ when Maria arrived
'I asked you when Maria arrived.'
b. Ik vertrok [?? *wanneer/toen Maria aankwam].

I left *when/ when Maria arrived
'I left when Maria arrived.'
$b^{\prime}$. Ik vertrek [FR wanneer/*toen Maria aankomt].
I (will)-leave when $/ *$ when Maria arrives
${ }^{\prime}$ I will leave when Maria arrives.
c. Ik vertrok/vertrek op het moment [HR *wanmeer/*

Ilef/ (will)-leave at the moment *when/ *when/that.COMP Maria arrived/arrives
'I left at the moment when Maria arrived.'

[^59](29) how
a. Vertel me [wh-int hoe jij het gedaan hebt]. tell me how you it done have 'Tell me how you did it.'
b. Ik heb het gedaan [wh-INT ?hoe/zoais jij het gedaan hebt]. ${ }^{17}$

I have it done ?how/as you it done have
'I did it how you did it.'
c. Ik heb het gedaan op de manier [hr hoe/zoals jij het (ook) gedaan hebt]. I have it done in the way how/as you it (too) done have 'I did it in the same way you did it.'
(30) why
a. Vertel me [wh-INT waarom jij het gedaan hebt]. tell me why you it done have 'Tell me why you did it.'
b. Ik heb het gedaan [FR *warom/omdat jij het gedaan hebt]. I have it done *why/ because you it done have ${ }^{6}$ I did it because you did it.'
c. Ik heb het gedaan om de reden [HR ?waarom/*omdat jij het (ook) gedaan hebt]. I have it done for the reason ?why/ *because you it (too) done have 'I did it for the (same) reason you did it.'

| Dutch | who | what | where | when | how | why |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Wh-INTs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ |
| FRs | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $* / \sqrt{ }$ | $?$ | $*$ |
| HRs | $*$ | $\%$ | $\sqrt{2}$ | $*$ | $\sqrt{ }$ | $?$ |

Specific comments. When. (28b) show that a FR with wanneer 'when' is unacceptable with a perfect tense, but only works in a future/conditional context ( $28 b^{\prime}$ ) for some reason. Toen exhibit the opposite pattem tense ((28b) vs. tense ( $\left.28 b^{\prime}\right)$ ). The bracketed string with toen in (28b) is not a FR according our definition though, since it is not

[^60]introduced by a wh-word nor is it clear if it has an adjunct gap. I am not sure if the brackted string with toen in (28b) constitutes an adverbial free relative, or just an adverbial clause. Smits (1988: 371-2) gives the non-conditional example of a HR with wanneer in (31). One of my consultants does not like this example, but he still finds it better than (28c).
(31) De dagen wanneer het regent zijn sombere dagen.
'The days when it rains are gloomy days.'

## References

Acquaviva, Paolo (1989). Aspetti della complementazione frasale, tesi di laurea. University of Pisa, Italy.

Baker, Carl L. (1968). Indirect questions in English, Ph.D. thesis. University of Illinois, Urbana.

Benveniste, E. (1971). Problems in general linguistics. Coral Gables, Florida: University of Miami Press.

Berman, Stephen (1991). The semantics of open sentences, Ph.D. thesis. University of Massachusetts at Amherst.

Berman, Stephen (1994). On the semantics of wh-clauses. New York/London: Garland.

Bresnan, Joan and Jane Grimshaw (1978). "The syntax of free relatives in English." Linguistic Inquiry 9: 331-391.

Caponigro, Ivano (2002). "Free relatives as DPs with a silent D and a CP complement." In V. Samiian, ed., Proceedings of the Western Conference on Linguistics 2000 (WECOL 2000), Fresno, California: California State University.

Carlson, Greg (1977). Reference to kinds in English, Ph.D. thesis. University of Massachusetts at Amherst.

Chierchia, Gennaro (1988). "Dynamic generalized quantifiers and donkey anaphora." In M. Krifka, ed., Genericity in natural language, 53-83. SNS-Bericht 88-42, University of Tübingen.

Chierchia, Gennaro (1992). "Anaphora and dynamic logic." Linguistics and Philosophy 15:111-183.

Chierchia, Gennaro (1995). Dynamics of meaning. Chicago/London: The University of Chicago Press.

Chierchia, Gennaro (1998). "Reference to kinds across languages." Natural Language Semantics 6: 339-405.

Cinque, Guglielmo (1981). "On the theory of relative clauses and markedness." The Linguistic Review 1:247-294.

Citko, Barbara (2000). "On the syntax and semantics of Polish adjunct clauses." Journal of Slavic Linguistics 8:1-38.

Citko, Barbara (in progress). "On headed, headless, and light-headed relative clauses," unpublished manuscript, Brandeis University, Waltham, Massachusetts.

Cole, Peter (1979). "The structure of headless relative clauses." In R. Bley-Vroman and S. F. Schmerling, eds., Proceedings of the Texas Linguistic Forum 15, 47-59. Austin, TX: Department of Linguistics, The University of Texas.

Cole, Peter (1987). "The structure of internally headed relative clauses." Natural Language and Linguistic Theory 5:277-302.

Cole, Peter, Wayne Harbert, and Gabriella Hermon (1978). "Relatives without heads: evidence from Quechua." Proceedings of the 8th North Eastern Linguistics Society Meeting (NELS 8).

Cole, Peter, Wayne Harbert, and Gabriella Hermon (1982). "Headless relative clauses in Quechua." International Journal of American Linguistics 48:113-124.

Cooper, Robin (1983). Quantification and syntactic theory. Dordrecht: Reidel.

Dayal, Veneeta (1996). Locality in WH Quantification: Questions and Relative Clauses in Hindi. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Dayal, Veneeta (1997). "Free Relatives and Ever: Identity and Free Choice Readings." Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory VII (SALT VII).

Dayal, Veneeta (in progress). "Number Marking and (In)definiteness in Kind Terms," unpublished manuscript, Rutgers University, New Brunswick, New Jersey.

Dekker, Paul (1993). "Existential disclosure." Linguistics and Philosophy 16:561-587.
den Dikken, Marcel and Anastasia Giannakidou (2001). "What the hell?!." In Minjoon Kim and Uri Strauss (eds.), Proceedings of the 31st North East Linguistics Society Meeting (NELS 31), 163-182. Amherst: GLSA, Department of Linguistics, University of Massachusetts.

Donati, Caterina. (1997). Elementi di sintassi della comparazione, Ph.D. thesis, University of Florence, Italy.

Fisiak, Jacek, Maria Lipinska-Grzegorek, and Tadeusz Zabroski (1978). An introductory English-Polish contrastive grammar. Warsaw: Panstwowe Wydawnictwo Naukowe.

Freeze, R. (1992). "Existentials and other locatives." Language 68:553-595.

Gallin, Daniel (1975). Intensional and higher order modal logic. Amsterdam: North Holland.

Ginzburg, Jonathan and Ivan A. Sag (2000). Interrogative investigations. Stanford, Califormia: CSLI.

Grimshaw, Jane (1977). English wh-constructions and the theory of grammar, Ph.D. thesis, University of Massachusetts at Amherst.

Groos, Anneke and Henk van Riemsdijk (1981). "Matching Effects in Free Relatives: a Parameter of Core Grammar." In A. Belletti, L. Brandi, L. Rizzi, eds., Theory of Markedness in Generative Grammar, 171-216. Scuola Normale Superiore, Pisa, Italy.

Grosu, Alexander (1989). "Pied Piping and the Matching Parameter." The Linguistic Review 6:41-58.

Grosu, Alexander (1994). Three studies in Locality and Case. London/New York: Routledge.

Grosu, Alexander. (1996). "The proper analysis of "missing P" free relative constructions." Linguistic Inquiry 27:257-293.

Grosu, Alexander (2003). "A unified theory of "standard" and "transparent" free relatives." Natural Language and Linguistic Theory 21:247-331.

Grosu, Alexander. (to appear). "The syntax-semantics of Modal Existential whconstructions." In Olga M. Tomic, ed., Topics in the syntax and semantics of Balkan languages. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Grosu, Alexander and Fred Landman (1998). "Strange relatives of the third kind." Natural Language Semantics 6:125-170.

Gutiérez-Rexach, Javier (1999). "The quantificational variability of free relatives." Proceeding. of the 35th Chicago Linguistic Society Meeting (CLS 35): The main session, 109-123. Chicago: Chicago Linguistic Society.

Gutiérrez-Rexach, Javier (2002). "The semantics of Spanish free relatives." In: Teresa Satterfield, Christina Tortora, and Diana Cresti, eds., Current issues in Romance languages. Selected papers from the 29 th Linguistics Symposium of Romance Languages (LSRL), Ann Arbor, 8-11 April 1999. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.

Hamblin, Charles L. (1973). "Questions in Montague English." Foundations of Language 10: 41-53. Reprinted in B. H. Partee, ed., 1976, Montague Grammar, 247-259. New York: Academic Press.

Harbert, Wayne (1983). "On the Nature of the Matching Parameter." The Linguistic Review 2: 237-284.

Heim, Irene (1982). The semantics of definite and indefinite NPs, Ph.D. thesis, University of Massachusetts at Amherst.

Hinterwimmer, Stefan (2003). "The quantification variability of free relatives and plural definites," unpublished manuscript, University of Potsdam.

Hintikka, Jakko (1976). The semantics of questions and the questions of semantics. Amsterdam: North Holland.

Hirschbühler, Paul (1978). The syntax and semantics of wh-constructions, Ph.D. thesis, University of Massachusetts at Amherst.

Hirschbühler, Paul and Maria-Luisa Rivero (1981). "Catalan restrictive relatives: core and periphery." Language 57:591-625.

Hirschbuihler, Paul and Maria-Luisa Rivero (1983). "Remarks on Free Relatives and Matching Phenomena." Linguistic Inquiry 14:505-520.

Iatridou, Sabine and Spyridoula Varlokosta (1998). "Pseudoclefts Crosslinguistically." Natural Language Semantics 6: 3-28.

Izvorski, Roumyana (1998). "Non-indicative WH-complements of existential/possessive predicates," in P.N. Tamanji and K. Kusumoto, eds., Proceedings of the 28 th North East Linguistics Society Meeting (NELS 28), 159-173. Amherst: GLSA, Department of Linguistics, University of Massachusetts.

Izvorski, Roumyana (2000). "Free adjunct free relatives." In: R. Billerey and B. D. Lillehaugen, eds., Proceedings of the 19th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics (WCCFL 19), Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.

Jackendoff, Ray S. (1977). X' Syntax: A study of phrase structure. Cambridge, MA: The MIT Press.

Jacobson, Pauline (1995). "On the quantificational force of English free relatives." In E. Bach, E. Jelinek, A. Kratzer, and B.H. Partee, eds.: Quantification in natural languages, 451-486. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Jespersen, Otto (1909-1949). A modern English grammar on historical principles. London: George Allen and Uwin.

Kamp, Hans (1981). "A theory of truth and semantic representation." In J. Groenendijk, T. Janssen and M. Stokhof (eds.), Formal methods in the study of language. Amsterdam: Mathematisch Centrum. Reprinted in J. Groenendijk, T. Janssen and M. Stokhof (eds.), Truth, interpretation and information. Dordrecht: Foris.

Karttunen, Lauri (1977). "Syntax and semantics of questions." Linguistics and Philosophy 1:3-44.

Kayne, Richard (1976). "Il relativo francese que." Rivista di grammatica generativa 1:59-111.

Kayne, Richard (1993). "Towards a modular theory of auxiliary selection." Studia Linguistica 47: 3-31.

Kayne, Richard (1994). The Antisymmetry of Syntax. Cambridge, Massachusetts : The MIT Press.

Koysef, D. (n.d.). Yekele. Online at: http://www.cs.uky.edu/~raphael/bavebter/numer.2.1/koysev.yekele.tra.html.

Kracht, Marcus (2002). "On the semantics of locatives." Linguistics and Philosophy 25:157-232.

Lahiri, Utpal (2002). Questions and Answers in Embedded Contexts. Oxford/New York: Oxford University Press.

Landman, Fred (1997). "Parallels between the nominal domain and the verbal domain: The case of definiteness effects," unpublished manuscript, Tel Aviv University.

Larson, Richard (1987). ""Missing prepositions" and the analysis of English free relative clauses." Linguistic Inquiry 18:239-266.

Larson, Richard (1998). "Free relative clauses and missing Ps: Reply to Grosu," unpublished manuscript, State University of New York, Stony Brook.

Lewis, David (1975). "Adverbs of quantification." In E. Keenan, ed., Formal semantics of natural languages. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Link, Godehard (1983). "The logical analysis of plural and mass terms: A latticetheoretical approach." In R. Bauerle, C. Schwarze, A. von Stechow, eds., Meaning, use and interpretation of language, 302-323. Berlin: de Gruyter.

McCawley, Jim (1998). The syntactic phenomena of English. $2^{\text {nd }}$ edition. Chicago/London: The University of Chicago Press.

Milsark, Gary L. (1974). Existential sentences in English, Ph.D. thesis. MIT, Cambridge, MA.

Móia, Telmo (1992). A syntaxe das orações relativas sem antecedente expresso do português. MA thesis, University of Lisbon.

Nishigauchi, Taisuke (1986). Quantification in syntox, Ph.D. thesis. University of Massachusetts at Amherst.

Nishigauchi, Taisuke (1990). Quantification in the theory of grammar. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Pancheva-Izvorski, Roumyana (2000). Free relatives and related matters, Ph.D. thesis. University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia.

Partee, Barbara H. (1987). "Noun Phrase interpretation and type-shifting principles." In: R. Bauerle, C. Schwarze, and A. von Stechow, Meaning, use, and interpretation of language, 361-383. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter.

Pesetzky, David (1982). Paths and categories, Ph.D. thesis, MIT, Cambridge, MA.
Plann, Susan (1980). Relative clauses in Spanish without overt antecedents and related constructions. Berkeley/Los Angeles: University of California Press.

Ramos-Santacruz, Milagrosa (1994). "Silent heads of Spanish nonspecific free relatives." MIT Working Papers in Linguistics 23. Proceedings of the 6th Annual Student Conference in Linguistics, University of Rochester. Cambridge, Massachsetts: MIT Linguistics Department.

Rappaport, Gilbert C. (1986). "On a persistent problem of Russian syntax: Sentences of the type mne negde spat." Russian Linguistics 10:1-31.
van Riemsdijk, Henk (to appear). "Free relatives." The Syntax Companion (SynCom). M. Everaert and H. van Riemsdijk, eds., Oxford: Blackwell.

Rivero, Maria-Luisa (1984). "Diachronic syntax and learnability: free relatives in 13th century Spanish." Journal of Linguistics 20:81-129.

Rivero, Maria-Luisa (1986). "Dialects and diachronic syntax: free relatives in Old Spanish." Journal of Linguistics 22:443-454.

Rooryck, Johan (1994). "Generalized Transformation and the Wh- Cycle: Free Relatives as Bare Wh-CPs." Groeninger Arbeiten zur germanistischen Linguistik 37:195-209.

Ross, John (1967). Constraints on variables in syntax, Ph.D. thesis. MIT, Cambridge, MA. Published in 1986 as Infinite Syntax!. Norwood, N.J.: Ablex.

Rudin, Cathrine (1986). Aspects of Bulgarian Syntax: Complementizers and WH Constructions. Columbus, OH: Slavica Publishers.

Schwarzschild, Roger (1996). Pluralities. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Sharvy, Richard (1980). "A more general theory of definite descriptions." Philosophical Review 89.

Smits, R.J.C. (1989). The Relative and Cleft Constructions of the Germanic and Romance Languages. Dordrecht: Foris.

Suñer, Margarita (1983-84). "Free Relatives and the Matching Parameter." The Linguistic Review 3:363-387.

Suñer, Margarita (1985). "Apparent non-matching relative clauses in Spanish." In: L.D. King and C. A. Maley, eds., Selected Papers from the XIIIth Linguistics Symposium on Romance Languages, 331-354. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
de Swart, Henriëtte (1991). Adverbs of quantification: A generalized quantifier approach, Ph.D. thesis, Rijksuniversiteit Groningen.

Tredinnick, Victoria (1993). "On the distribution and interpretation of the suffix -ever in English free relatives." Proceedings of the $2^{\text {nd }}$ Meeting of the Student Organization of Linguistics in Europe (ConSOLE II).
de Vries, Mark (2002). The syntax of relativization, Ph.D. thesis. LOT International Series. The Hague: Holland Academic Graphics.

Wiltschko, Martina (1998). "The syntax and semantics of free relatives." Proceedings of the 17th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics (WCCFL 17).


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ At least under a ceratin view of indefinites (cf. Kamp (1981) and Heim (1982)).

[^1]:    ${ }^{2}$ Dayal (1996) makes a closely related proposal for correlative in Hindi.

[^2]:    ${ }^{1}$ Ross (1967: 38 [1983: 20]) is the earliest work where I have found the term free relatives mentioned, although Ross's words seem to presuppose an even earlier origin: "the type of clause which have been called 'free relative clause'".
    ${ }^{2}$ Throughout this work, only restrictive headed relatives are considered and the acronym $H R s$ is always meant to refer just to those.
    ${ }^{3}$ Henceforth, HEAD will be used to refer to the constituent that precedes a $H R$ and that the HR modifies. This is to avoid confusion with the notion of "head" of a phrase.
    ${ }^{4}$ FRs are sometimes called headless relatives. This is somehow confusing since the same term is sometimes used to refer to a different construction, i.e. intemally headed relative clauses (e.g. Cole et al. 1978; Cole 1979).

[^3]:    ${ }^{5}$ I use 'phrasal wh-words' to refer to all single wh-words that can form a maximal projection (DP or PP) by themselves, without any further lexical material. For instance, who, where, when and why are always phrasal wh-words in English, while what and how can be phrasal wh-words or not. I assume that which is never a phrasal wh-word: it always takes an NP complement, which can sometimes be covert when recoverable from the context.
    ${ }^{6}$ The acceptability of (3a) varies across speakers from perfectly acceptable to slighty marginal.
    ${ }^{7}$ According to my consultants, (3d) must be uttered with contrastive stress on $I$ and you to sound perfectly acceptable.

[^4]:    ${ }^{8}$ These HRs have been called semi-free relatives (Smits 1989) or false free relatives (de Vries 2002).

[^5]:    ${ }^{9}$ Thanks to Carson Schüzze for pointing out this piece of data.
    ${ }^{10}$ The term concealed question for this kind of nominal is due to Baker (1968), who has an extensive discussion of the issue in Ch. 6. See also Grimshaw (1977: Ch. 6).
    ${ }^{11}$ Example from Baker (1968: p. 10, ex. 2.4-2.6).
    ${ }^{12}$ Example from Baker (1968: p. 10, ex. 2.7-2.9).

[^6]:    ${ }^{13}$ Gutiérrez-Rexach (2002: 120, ex. 28a).

[^7]:    ${ }^{14}$ Some nonstandard varieties of English use what in HRs: e.g. some Southern US dialects (Harold Torrence p.c.), dialects spoken in the Southern Appalachians and in the Ozark Mountains of Arkansas and Missouri (Bruce Hayes p.c.), and Working Class London English (Ed Keenan, Peter Ladefoged and Tim Stowell p.c.).

[^8]:    ${ }^{15}$ My consultant told me that ( 32 b ) must be uttered with contrastive stress on $I$ and you in order to sound fully acceptable.
    ${ }^{16}$ From 7th Heaven, episode: Monkey Business-Part 1, originally aired on WB on 9/16/02 (thanks to Carson Schütze for pointing this out).
    ${ }^{17}$ CNN News on 04/18/03 (thanks to Carson Schütze for pointing this out).

[^9]:    ${ }^{18}$ Thanks to Emanuela Arosio for pointing this out to me and collecting the data.

[^10]:    ${ }^{21} S a$ is an unstressed (contracted) form of $s(i n) a$ (cf. ( $48 \mathrm{~b}-\mathrm{c}$ ). They both mean 'you' in the nominative case, but the full form is focused or more emphatic

[^11]:    ${ }^{22}$ According to our definition, the acceptable variant of the bracketed clause in ( 51 b ) is not a FR since it is not introduced by a wh-word.
    ${ }^{23}$ According to our definition, the acceptable variant of the bracketed clause in (52b) is not $a F R$ since it is not introduced by a wh-word.

[^12]:    ${ }^{24}$ According to my consultants, (54b) without $e t$ would be better translated as ' 1 admire whoever works hard'.

[^13]:    ${ }^{25}$ The sentence is "very colloquial" for one of my consultants, "slightly colloquial" for another one and "totally fine" for my third consultant.
    ${ }^{26}$ The sentence is "*?" for one of my consultant, "very colloquial" for another one and "totally fine" for the third one.

[^14]:    ${ }^{27}$ The other way around would not necessarily be expected. HRs could still be formed in ways FRs cannot. For instance, one could claim that the reason why HRs can be introduced by a complementizer or nothing at all in some languages is because the presence of the preceding head licenses some process of deletion under recoverability. Of course, this option would not be available with FRs, given that they lack a head by definition.
    ${ }^{28}$ So far, Ihave found FRs in twenty-nine languages that are still spoken, each of which makes use of three or more wh-words to form FRs.

[^15]:    ${ }^{1}$ I am borrowing the term from Grosu (2003).

[^16]:    ${ }^{2}$ Some speakers prefer I hate it $[\mathrm{Fr}$ when you yell like that] to (8a), but the bracketed string is no longer a DP-like standard FR according to our definition, since the matrix object position is now occupied by it.
    ${ }^{3}$ Smits (1989: 298, ex. 21).
    ${ }^{4}$ Smits (1989: 298, ex. 25).
    ${ }^{5}$ Thanks to Pam Munro for pointing this out from a thesis she was reading. She also added that she herself cannot use this FR with how in this context.

[^17]:    ${ }^{6}$ Carson Schutze pointed out that I went (to)the places you told me to is acceptable both with and without the preposition to. Since my consultants agreed that the preposition-less option is restricted to just the plural form of noun places ( ${ }^{\prime}$ I went the place you told me to; ${ }^{* I}$ went grocery stores you told me), I will ignore this idiosyncratic case for the time being and I will assume that PP-like standard FRs can never be replaced by a DP when they occur in a complement position.
    ${ }^{7}$ DP-like temporal adjuncts like the bracketed one in (10b) are sensitive to the nature of their nominal head. They can occur with nouns that refer to time units (time, year, day, minute, etc.), while they are not acceptable with nouns like situations or occasions: (*On) every occasion/situation you say goodbye, I die a little. They may just be PPs with a covert P that is licensed by only certain nouns.

[^18]:    ${ }^{8}$ Henceforth, the term external semantics of an expression will be used to refer to the semantic contribution of that expression as a whole, while the term internal semantics will refer to the semantic contribution of the parts that the expression is made up of and the way they are semantically composed.

[^19]:    ${ }^{9}$ See also Sharvy (1980).

[^20]:    ${ }^{10}$ See Schwarzschild (1996) for a concise introduction to recent theories of the semantics of plurals and for a radically different proposal.
    ${ }^{11}$ The part-of relation is reflexive, transitive and anti-symmetric.

[^21]:    12 Dayal (1996) extensively argues for a similar proposal for correlatives in Hindu and suggests an extension of this approach to internally headed relative clauses in languages Like Japanese, Lakhota, and Quechua. Neither construction that Dayal discusses is introduced by wh-words, therefore neither is a FR according to our definition.

[^22]:    ${ }^{13}$ In Modern Greek, most standard FRs seems to be interpreted as the corresponding -ever FRs. See data and comment in the Appendix.

[^23]:    ${ }^{14}$ See Carlson (1977) for a semantic analysis of English bare plurals.

[^24]:    ${ }^{15}$ Capital $X$ stands for a variable over properties or, equivalently, sets of entities.
    ${ }^{16}$ The o-operator applies to a set and returns its maximal entity. If the set does not have a maximal entity, then $\sigma$ is undefined (Link 1983).

[^25]:    ${ }^{17}$ The italics is used here to signal the use of a foreign word without any metalinguistic implications. In other words, here I am using the term clafouti to refer to the tasty French dessert and not to the term itself.

[^26]:    ${ }^{18}$ Cooper (1983) does not discuss PP-like standard FRs nor -ever FRs. Since he is mainly concerned with English, he does not deal with existential FRs either.

[^27]:    ${ }^{19} \mathrm{CP}$ ' is a short form for the translation in logical form of the CP of a standard FR .

[^28]:    ${ }^{20}$ ( $50 \mathrm{a}, \mathrm{a}^{\prime}$ ) from Berman (1994: 5, ex. 2a,3a), ( $50 \mathrm{~b}, \mathrm{~b}^{\prime}$ ) from Berman (1994: 49, ex. 38c,39c).

[^29]:    ${ }^{21}$ Cf. Groos and van Riemsdijk (1981), Hirschbuhler and Rivero (1981; 1983), Rivero (1984; 1986), Harbert (1983), Suñer (1983-84; 1985), and Grosu (1989, 1994, 1996).
    ${ }^{22}$ Cf. Grimshaw (1977), Bresnan and Grimshaw (1978), Larson (1987; 1998), Kayne (1994), and latridou, Anagnostopoulou and Izyorski (1999).

[^30]:    ${ }^{23}$ Cf. Acquaviva (1989), Rooryck (1994), Donati (1997), Caponigro (2002).

[^31]:    'Thanks to Daphna Heller, Orr Ravitz, and Yael Sharvit for the data.
    ${ }^{2}$ Existential FRs introduced by eyfo 'where' are judged colloquial by one of my consultants.
    ${ }^{3}$ Existential FRs introduced by eyx 'how' are judged very colloquial by one of my consultants (the same one as inf.2).

[^32]:    ${ }^{4}$ Whether the gap is an argument or adjunct depends on the assumptions about the selectional properties of a predicate like parlare 'to talk'.

[^33]:    ${ }^{5}$ Thanks to Adam Albright for pointing this out to me.

[^34]:    ${ }^{6}$ The particle da is traditionally called a subjunctive marker, therefore 1 glossed it Subl. "It occurs with all persons and all finite verb forms" (Friedman, Victor. 'Macedonian'. In Bernard Comrie \& Greville G. Corbett (eds.) The Slavonic Languages. London and New York: Routledge, 1993: 271). Thanks to Slavica Kochovska for the quote and the reference.

[^35]:    ${ }^{7}$ Indefinite DPs are set denoting expressions that may undergo existential closure in an approach à la Kamp (1981) or Heim (1982). Indefinites can denote sets after existential disclosure applies in an approach à la Dekker (1993) and Chierchia (1995).

[^36]:    ${ }^{8}$ Cf. Benveniste (1971), Freeze (1992), Kayne (1993).

[^37]:    ${ }^{9}$ For the sake of simplicity, I assume that the complex I' sà dire solo no translates into a simple 1-place predicate (35.1).

[^38]:    ${ }^{10}$ Notice that, contra Pancheva Izvosrski (2000) and Grosu (to appear), not all existential FRs have to receive a modal interpretation, as shown by the indicative existential FR in (34).

[^39]:    ${ }^{11}$ This is meant as just a necessary condition for an expression to be entity-denoting.

[^40]:    ${ }^{12}$ Although I went the places you told me to go is judged as acceptable as / went to the places you told me to go (some speakers even prefer the option with no preposition), this is a specific property of the plural form places and does not apply in general, as shown by the unacceptability of (i) and (ii):
    (i) "I went the fire houses you told me to go.
    (ii) I I went the restaurants you told me to go.

[^41]:    ${ }^{1}$ According to my consultants, (1e) must be uttered with contrastive stress on $I$ and you to sound perfectly acceptable.

[^42]:    ${ }^{2}$ The sentence is acceptable with the meaning of 'I did it because you did it', but in this case it is no longer a standard FR , as I already discussed in Chapter 1 \& ????.

[^43]:    ${ }^{3}$ Whyever is marginally attested in English in wh-INTs.

[^44]:    4 (17a-c) correspond to Dayal's (1997: 26a-c).

[^45]:    ${ }^{5}(22)$ and (23) are Dayal's (18) and (19), respectively.

[^46]:    ${ }^{6}$ Although Dayal (1997) makes use of the operator i to refer to maximalization, I will continue using the operator of introduced in Chapter 2 to refer to the same semantic operation.

[^47]:    ${ }^{7}$ Along the lines of Jacobson (1995) and Dayal (1995) (cf. Chapter 2, § ??).

[^48]:    ${ }^{8}$ I am assuming that I'll buy [which you buy] is ungrammatical because, unilike what, which is never a phrasal wh-word, but always takes a possibly covert NP complement.
    ${ }^{9}$ I replaced the personal pronoun you in (40a) with the proper noun Adam in order not to introduce irrelevant complication.

[^49]:    ${ }^{1}$ Actually, adverbs of quantification is the term usually found in the literature. I will keep using adverbials of quantification to make clear that I am referring to adverbial phrases as well.

[^50]:    ${ }^{2}$ All the examples in (3) are from Berman (1994: 40-41; 48-49).

[^51]:    ${ }^{3}$ Quatificational variability in standard FRs was first discussed in Berman (1991; 1994) for English. Wiltschko (1998) briefly mentions it as well. Gutiérrez-Rexach (1999) discusses quantificational variability in Spanish standard and -ever FRs. Recently, Hinterwimmer (2003) discussed quantificational variability in FRs by looking at English and Gemman data.

[^52]:    ${ }^{4}$ Adjectival and nominal predicates always agree in number with their subject in Italian.

[^53]:    ${ }^{3}$ The * on que in (5a) only means that Digue'm que ho vas fer can never mean 'Tell me how you did it.' It is a perfectly acceptable sentence in Catalan with the meaning 'Tell me that you did it'.

[^54]:    ${ }^{4}$ I consider the complementizer que and the que in headed relative clauses to be the same element and I gloss it as COMP, following what Kayne (1976) and Cinque (1981) have argued for French and Italian, respectively.
    ${ }^{5}$ I consider que in the DET+que constructions to be a complementizer, following Plann (1980: Chapter 1),
    ${ }^{6}$ The bracketed clause with lo que in (14b), the only acceptable option, is not a FR according to our definition, since it does not have a wh-word.

[^55]:    ${ }^{7}$ Here and in the following acceptable instances of en que, 1 cannot determine if que is a complementizer or a relative pronoun.

[^56]:    ${ }^{8}$ Not a FR for the same reason why (14b) is not (cf. fn. 6).

[^57]:    ${ }^{11}$ The variant of (21c) with wo is colloquial or mildy deviant for both my consultants.
    ${ }^{12} \mathrm{AlS}$ 'when' is a subordinating temporal conjunction.
    ${ }^{13}$ (i) Er singt, wie er tanzt: schrecklich!
    he sings how he dances: horribly
    'He sings as he dances: horribly!'

[^58]:    ${ }^{14}$ The variant of (24c) with warum is mildly deviant for one of my consultant and (almost) unacceptable for the other
    ${ }^{15}$ Wie 'who' in (25a) triggers the use of the existential er 'there' [Mark de Vries p.c.].

[^59]:    ${ }^{16}$ Wat is unacceptable in HRs in standard Dutch. However, there is a language change going on and for many speakers wat is acceptable in this context [Mark de Vries p.c.].

[^60]:    ${ }^{17}$ But the following $F R$ with hoe is judged perfectly acceptable by the same speaker:
    (i) Ik heb het gedaan [rR hoe jij het wilde]. I have it done how you it wanted 'I did it how you wanted.'

